

A  
T R E A T I S E  
O F T H E  
C O V E N A N T  
O F  
G R A C E,

As it is dispensed to the Elect Seed,  
effectually unto

S A L V A T I O N.

B E I N G

The Substance of divers Sermons preached upon  
A<sup>d</sup>. 7. 8. by that eminently holy and judicious  
man of God, Mr. *John Cotton*, Teacher of the  
Church at *Boston* in N. E.

---

The Third Edition, Corrected, and very much  
Enlarged, by the Authors own Hand.

---

L O N D O N,

Printed for Peter Parker, in Bopes-head-Ally,  
next Cornhill, 1671.





## To the Reader.

**T**He Works of this Reverend Author (now with God) have already praised him in the gate. The name of Cotton is as an ointment poured out; nor needs there more to commend a Book to any godly Readers acceptance, then to Jay 'tis his. But as the name of this Author puts a great value upon the Work, so the Subject-matter doth it much more. The Covenant of Grace is a taking Title. How free is Grace! how sure is the Covenant! The freeness of grace, and the sureness of the Covenant of Grace, as made with Jesus Christ for us, or with us in Jesus Christ, is the Subject of this excellent Piece. That unbelievers may be inticed into the bonds of this Covenant, and believers grow up in the joy and comfort of it, and that the unsearchable riches of grace, may be admired by all the reasons of this Publication.



Joseph Caryl.



A

# Table of the Contents.

	Pag.
<b>T</b> he Coherence of the Text.	1.
<b>Doct.</b> In the Covenant which God made with Abraham, God gave himself to be a God to him and his seed; and received Abraham and his seed to be a people unto himself; and the chiefest of this seed, the Lord Jesus Christ, he took to be the Mediator or Surety of this Covenant between them both.	3
In the Covenant, these three things are implied	ibid.
1. That God gave himself to be a God unto Abraham, and his seed.	
<b>Viz.</b> 2. That God did receive Abraham, and his seed to be his people.	
3. That God takes the Lord Jesus Christ to be the Mediator, and Surety of this Covenant.	
1. God gave himself unto Abraham; containeth three things.	
1. The Blessing given, viz.	
1. The whole nature of God and all the Persons	6
2. All the Ordinances, Creatures, and works of God	7
2. The Order in which it is given.	
1. God doth first give, and not the Creature	10
2. God is the first thing that is given	ibid.
3. The Manner of giving; wherein the Freedom, Of the Eternity } Gift }	11
	Ob-

## The Contents.

- Object. The Lord did require, that he should give  
 should give himself again.      Answ.      ib.
- Object. The Lord did require, that himself and  
 seed should be circumcised.      Answered      12
2. The Lord did take Abraham and his seed, by a  
 double act      14
1. By preparing them } Bondage  
                                       } by a spirit of      Burning      ib.
2. By giving of himself to them, and taking possession  
 of them by his Spirit      17
- Quest. How doth the Lord give himself unto his peo-  
 ple, and they receive him?      ib.
1. The Spirit takes up his seat in the soul,  
 making it his Temple      ib.
- Answ. 2. The Spirit } Give it self to }  
                                       } also worketh } the Lord. }  
                                       } faith in the } Receive Jesus }  
                                       } soul, to } Christ. }
- Which Faith is built upon some absolute Promise  
 of grace      19
- From Union with Christ, there springeth Commu-  
 nion with him in spiritual blessings      21
1. Relative blessings, not created in us, ado-  
 ption and justification      ib.
- Viz. 2. Positive blessings, created in us, sanctifi-  
 cation and glorification      23
3. The Lord did take Jesus Christ (the chiefest of A-  
 brahams seed) to be the Mediator of his Covenant      24
- Quest. How did the Lord constitute him so to be?      ibid.
1. By taking Jesus Christ the Son of the  
 Virgin Mary, to be one Person with the Je-  
 sus Christ      ib.
- Answ. 2. By giving him to be a Covenant.      25
- Re-



## The Contents.

- Receiveth from God all the Promises and gracious gifts requisite for him to be King, Priest and Prophet ibid.
- Wherein he } Performeth all things needful for Application of redemption, unto the souls of his people ib.
- Use 1.** To teach the difference between the Covenants of works and of grace 26
1. Difference: in the one God offereth himself upon condition of obedience; not so in the other ib.
  2. In that of works, the union that is between God and a soul, is by that faith from which people may apostate 27
  3. In that Covenant, the fruits which flow from it (viz. the semblance of justification, adoption, and sanctification endure but for a season. 29
- Quest.** Is that sanctification the same that is in Gods children? 30
- Answ.** No: being the Washed Swine sanctification either of Goats ib.
4. In respect of the Mediator of the one and the other 32
- Use 2.** It holdeth forth an Argument against the whole body of Arminianism 33
- Use 3.** To teach Gods people to bear a gracious respect to them that are under a Covenant of works, and not forthwith to condemn them ib.
- Use 4.** To clear up sundry passages that concern the Covenant of grace, by answering of divers Questions
1. **Quest.** What is the first gift that the Lord giveth unto his Elect? 35
- Answ.** Christ is first given, and with him faith to receive him ib.
- Quest.

## The Contents.

Quest. Doth not the Lord give saving preparations  
before Jesus Christ? ibid.

Resp. Negatively, and the Reason thereof ib.

2. Quest. In what order doth the Lord give the  
Covenant and the blessings of it; whether faith be-  
fore them, or those blessings before faith to apply  
them? 36

Answ. He doth give himself to work faith, before  
faith can be there: and then faith doth receive the  
blessings of the Covenant, as adoption and justifica-  
tion ib.

3. Quest. Whether we do receive Christ in an abso-  
lute or conditional Promise? 37

Answ. 'Tis alwaies in an absolute Promise ib.

4. Quest. Whether a man may evidence his union  
with Christ from his sanctification 38

Answ. In four Propositions

1. Prop. That sanctification which may be found  
in a Covenant of works, is no evidence of union  
with Christ 39

The difference between the Law }  
Sanctification which } 40  
floweth from the } Gospel }

1. In the Root in which it springs; which is  
hard to discern ib.

2. In the Rule whereby they are guided, viz. the  
word of God 44

Yet the difference here is not easily to be discern-  
ed ib.

No not by professing universal obedience to all  
Gods Commandments 45

3. In the end and scope which they aim at, that  
also is difficult 46

Yea, though they may suffer Persecution 47

2. Prop.

## The Contents.

2. Prop. True sanctification is many times dark  
to a Christian 46
3. Prop. True sanctification is not discerned, nei-  
ther is it discernable, until Justifying faith be  
first discerned 50
4. Prop. Though the resemblance be near between  
the Legal and Evangelical holiness, yet there  
is a real difference, which is discernable by the  
Spirit of God 51
- (Root, which is faith ibid.
- Viz. both } Rule, by which they walk 53
- in the } Scope and end which they aim
- at 54
5. Quest. Of what use are Promises, if not to bring  
us unto Christ; which it seems they do not, if Christ  
must first be given? 56
- Answ. There is threefold use of Promises ib.
1. Before union with Christ,
- Doctrine, to teach what things are laid up  
in Christ 57
- Viz. for { Instruction, shewing whither to look for life
- and salvation ib.
- Exhortation, inviting and perswading to  
to come to Jesus Christ 58
- They have also a threefold effect in some of all  
sorts, good and bad.
- Viz. { Illumination 59
- of { Taste of Christ, so as to be affected with  
him ib.
- Conviction, so as to leave inexcusable, if  
despised ib.
2. In union with Christ; for the Lord giveth  
himself to the soul in a Promise 60
3. After union with Christ, more efficacious  
still 61



# The Contents.

	Doctrine, to teach us what gifts of	ib.
	grace are in Christ	ib.
	Instruction, to direct us whither to	ib.
	look for qualifications	ib.
Viz.	Prayer	62
for	To know our spiritual state, and	ib.
	means to discern it	ib.
	To work all the qualifications in us,	63
	2; which the blessings are promised	63
	To stir up to such duties, to which the	ib.
	blessings are promised	ib.
	To strengthen Faith	64
6. Quest.	To what use serveth the Law, if God	
	giveth himself to his people, without respect to any	
	work	67
Resp.	Two of use both un- { Carnal }	
	to them that are { Spiritual }	68
	{ Elect, to aggravate their sins }	ib.
1. To carnal,	{ Not elect, in } Disobedience	70
both to	{ regard of } Obedience	71
2. To them that are spiritual,	and under a Cove-	
	nant of grace	73
Viz.	as they are under the Law to Christ, which	
	is explained	ib.
	There are two effects of Gods people being under	
	the Law	76
	1. The sense of Gods Fatherly displea-	
	sure, when they transgress	ib.
Viz.	2. The sense of Gods gracious acceptance	
	of their obedience	ib.
	Yet a Christian is not under the Law, i. e. the	
	Covenant of it	80

## The Contents.

	Look for justification and salvation from obedience	81
	Fear condemnation by his disobedience	83
So as neither to	Look for conjugal comfort, from his obedience	84
	Nor fear conjugal divorce, from his disobedience	
	Claim his right unto any conditional promise, by his performance of the condition	86
Application, by way of use, it serveth to shew,		
	1. The Doctrine of the Covenant is free from Antinomianism	87
Viz.	2. How far Gods servants are freed from the Law	88
	3. Men some discontentments of their spi- rits and state	89
	4. How to build our faith and hope	ib.
7. Quest.	If the Lord giveth himself, and his holy Spirit, what need is there of any gifts of ho- liness, to work and act by? He can do all in us without us	91
Answ.	There is a necessity of holiness, and of fol- lowing after it	92
Quest.	What need is there to follow after holi- ness, if the holy Spirit dwell in us?	94
Answ.	To be fitter instruments for every good word and work	ib.
Quest.	But if there be need of gifts of holiness, what need the Holy Ghost dwell in us?	ib.
	1. To keep these gifts in us	ib.
	2. To act them in us	95
Answ.	3. To witness to them in our souls	96
	4. To comfort us in the changes that may come upon us	ib. Quest.

## The Contents.

**Quest.** *How and to what end are we to imploy and improve our sanctification?* 97

1. We are } Our supply of it }  
           to look to } The perfection }  
           Christ, for } of it }      ib.

2. Not to trust in the gifts of holiness and sanctification 99

**Answ.** } Neither } The performance of any  
           for } duties without Christ } ib.  
               } Justification from them } 104

3. In point of witness ib.

4. In point of rejoycing 105

5. To grow up in grace and holiness 107

**8. Quest.** *A further main Question for the clearing of the Point, is, How doth God the Father give himself?* 111

**Answ.** *God the Father doth give himself by a three-fold work or act*

1. By giving his Son for the redemption of Abraham and his seed, and giving him also unto them, in their calling ib.

**Quest.** *How doth the Father call and draw us to his Son?* 114

**Viz.** } Resp. 1. by his Word and Spirit } ib.

2. By giving the Spirit of Adoption 110

3. By a work of Reconciliation } 124

Hence follow two 1. Adoption 10.

Acts of God up- }  
           on the soul } 2. Justification. 125

1. 'Tis useful to teach us how we came to fellowship with Christ. ib.

Four sorts of persons fall short of union with Christ 1.



## The Contents.

1. Such as bless themselves in their natural e-  
state 126
2. Such as rest in their Reformati<sup>o</sup>ns ib.
3. Such as rest in a Faith in Christ, which is of  
their own making ib.
4. Such as Wait on the Lord in their own  
strength 127
- Use 2. To shew upon what grounds a soul cometh  
to close with Christ, viz. upon an Absolute  
Promise 130
- Use 3. Hence see that 'tis not safe to build upon  
Qualifications in our selves, until Christ be  
first received in some Promise 134
- Use 4. Of Consolation to such as rest upon the free  
grace of God in Christ Jesus revealed in some  
Promise 135
9. Quest. How doth God the Son give himself to A-  
braham and his seed? 136
  1. By his taking our nature upon him,  
and giving himself to redeem us by his  
obedience, whether active or passive  
ib.
- Answ. 2. By revealing the Father unto us, and  
his free grace 141
 

From the burden of fears 143

Whence arise } Of hope, through the fil-  
 seth liberty } ling of the Spirit 145

- 3. By keeping us in this state ib.
- Both by { Praying for us 146
 

His ruling Providence ib.
- Use.
- 1. Then our state before redemption is a state of  
Bondage 148
- 2. To

## The Contents?

2. To teach such as are in bondage, where their Redemption lieth 149
3. To teach Christians to hold on in this way 151
4. To wait on the Lord for this his Redemption 152
5. To stand fast in our Christian liberties ibid.
- Quest. 10. How God the Holy Ghost doth give himself to Abraham and his seed 153
1. For Inhabitation ib.

- Which is necessary
1. For Union with Jesus Christ 154
  2. To keep possession against all adversary powers 155
  2. For Sanctification, opened at large 158
  3. For Revelation, and what things he doth reveal 165

- Witnessing to our spiritual state
- How he doth reveal, viz. by
  - Making known all necessary truth, yea, even our faith and justification 168
  - 172

For Application, 'tis useful,

1. To teach Christians not to be afraid of the word Revelation 177
2. Not to look for any Revelation without the Word 179
3. In Justification to look for no word but such as holds forth some absolute Promise of free grace ib.
4. The fourth work of the Holy Ghost is Consolation 181

- Bearing witness with an abundant measure of consolation 182
- Viz. by
- A more constant and abiding comfort ib.
  - A powerful and strong consolation 183
- Here

## The Contents.

1. *What is the Seal of the Spirit?  
and how it doth seal?* 184

Here two  
Queries

1. By confirming the Promises to  
the soul ib.

2. By engraving the likeness of  
Christ in the soul 187

3. By distinguishing the Saints  
from others 188

2. *How is the Holy Ghost an earnest* 189

1. *As he bindeth the bargain between  
God and the soul* ib.

2. *As he is the first fruit of the pay-  
ment* ib.

Use.

1. *To teach us how to speak of the Seal of the Spirit* 190

2. *To teach the danger of laying claim to a Promise  
by any work of grace, before we have the Seal of  
the Spirit* ib.

*Yet the Spirit doth not seal immediately, but by  
and in some word of Promise* 191

3. *To teach such as have received the first fruits of  
the Spirit, to know that they have received an  
earnest of an everlasting possession* 192

4. *To teach us, that if we have received Christ,  
never to rest till the Holy Ghost doth stamp more of  
the image of Christ in us* ib.

*The second branch of the Doctrine.*

That God received Abraham and his seed to be a  
peculiar people unto himself 194

*For which, three things are opened.*

1. *That God did take Abraham and his seed to be a  
peculiar people to himself* ib.

2. *How*



## The Contents.

2. How he did so take them to be his people 195  
 3. Who are meant by Abraham and his seed ib.  
 Quest. Whether the carnal seed had any portion in  
 the Covenant of grace 196

1. They were called to outward fellow-  
 ship of the Covenant ib.

2. They are not far from the kernel and  
 blessing of the Covenant 197

1. They have not only outward Ordinances, and  
 common gifts of the Spirit, but a liberal use of  
 the Creatures, much patience of God 198

2. They have the Offer of the sure mercies of Da-  
 vid ib.

Now the Causes of their being discovenanted are

Mocking or persecuting of the Cove-  
 nant ib.

The love of worldly sensual blessings

Either } 99

A self-confident cleaving unto gifts re-  
 ceived by the Covenant 200

The Use.

1. To justify the righteousness of God in the confusion  
 of the children of Christian Parents 202

What we may think of the Infants of Parents in  
 Covenant, if they die 204

2. To teach Parents that are in Covenant, to bring  
 up their children under the wing of the Covenant 205

3. To teach them that are in Covenant, to be all  
 (themselves and theirs) for God 206

Here is a } 1. For Family duties ib.  
 ground } 2. To improve all we have for the glo-  
 ry of Gods grace 207

4. To look to the Lord in all duties to receive us  
 and ours 208

The

# The Contents.

## The third Branch of the Doctrine.

That the Lord took the chief of Abrahams seed, the Lord  
Jesus Christ, to be the Mediator and Surety of the  
Covenant between God and Abraham 209

Christ is a fit Mediator in respect

Of his	{	Person, bring God- man, whereby he is	{	Fit to be the ground of union with God	ib.
				Able to maintain is	ib.

{	Offices, by	Removing offences	{	Communicating good things	210

1. As a Priest, offering Sacrifice, making inter-  
cession, &c. ib.

2. As a Prophet, he teacheth us all things

3. As a King, he	{	Us to himself	211
applies all to us,		The creature to us	

In particular, He is a Mediator of the Covenant in a  
threefold respect.

1. In that he is the Messenger of it, to publish  
it ib.

2. In that he doth ratifie and confirm it by a  
threefold Seal

1. By his blood ib.

2. By his Spirit 212.

3. By the Seals of the Covenant ib.

3. In that he is the Prince and Head of it ib.

Which

# The Contents.

1. That all the Covenant is made first with him ib.
2. That he doth inherit the blessings of the Covenant 213

Which im-  
plyeth  
three  
things

Therefore

Fulfilled all the condi-  
tions of the Covenant ib.

He

Communicateth the blef-  
sings of the Covenant ib.

3. That he doth apply the comforts of the Promises to us ib.

Use.

1. For refutation of the Popish Doctrine, that deviseth other Mediators 214

Object. We pray the Saints to pray for us.

1. Christ hath bidden us to pray one for another, but not to the Saints in Heaven ibid.
2. We do not depend upon the merit of their Prayers ibid.

2. For Instruction how to make an holy use of all the gifts of Gods grace, and duties of Gods worship 216

3. A ground to strengthen faith; and for encouragement to the duties and fruits of it 219

3 AU 59

THE



THE  
COVENANT OF GRACE,

As it is dispensed to the Elect Seed, effectually unto Salvation.

Acts 7. 8. *And he gave him the Covenant of Circumcision.*

**T**His blessed Servant of God, *Stephen*, being called to account concerning what he had said touching *Jesus Christ* his Destroying the Temple, it is the scope of his whole Discourse throughout this Chapter, to justify the Doctrine that he had taught; that though he had taught *Jesus of Nazareth* should destroy that place, yet in so teaching, he taught no Blasphemy: And this he doth in an Historical Narration make clear and evident:

1. From the Sweet Communion which their Fathers had with God before either Temple or Tabernacle was built: and if so, then he would not have them look at it as unsafe for them, or as an utter ruine to Religion, if that both the Temple and the Ordinances of the Temple were destroyed in themselves, and fulfilled in him. Three passages of *Abraham's* communion with God, *Stephen* doth relate and maintain that he had them before any of *Moses* his Customs were known.

1. God did *effectually call him*; which call he did also obey, (2, 3, 4. verses) though as yet he knew no Circumcision.

2. God giveth him *a trial of his Faith*, wherein he found *Abraham faithful*, 5, 6, 7. verses. God promised to give him the land of *Canaan* for a possession, but he gave him not a foots breadth. He promised to give it unto his Seed, when as yet he had no child: and when God gave him Seed, yet they should sojourn in a strange Land, and be in Bondage four hundred years.

3. God gave him the *Covenant of Circumcision*, in the words of the Text. And *Abraham* in the strength of the Blessing of God begat *Isaac*, and Circumcised him according to Gods direction; and all this before *Moses* gave any Ordinances unto them to keep; and before either Temple, or Tabernacle was built. From hence we have heard, that the soul may have very spiritual and gracious communion with God, before it partake in any seal of Church-fellowship. For *Abrahams Faith* was thoroughly tryed before he had the Seal of Church-Covenant given him. We heard also this propounded, which is the words of the Text, that God gave unto *Abraham* the *Covenant of Circumcision*: which Doctrine doth imply in it four principal parts, all of them serving to clear *Stevens* meaning.

1. The Author and manner of dispensing it: God gave, so it was by Gift.

2. The Articles of it; and they are to be inquired into.

3. The Confederates, and they are expressed God on the one side, and Abraham and his Seed on the other side.

4. The

## New Covenant.

2

4. The Seal of it, *Circumcision*, which was also the Seal of Church-Covenant. These four parts do hold so many Notes; the first of them was spoken unto in the last point formerly handled. Now for the second and third parts, (to wit, the *Articles* of the Covenant, and the *Confederates*) we comprehend them both in this one Note.

Doct. *That in the Covenant which God made with Abraham, God gave himself to be a God to Abraham, and to his Seed; and received Abraham and his Seed to be a People unto himself; and the chiefest of this Seed, the Lord Jesus Christ, he took to be the Mediator, or surety of this Covenant between them both.* This is the sum of the Articles, and of the Confederates: what the Articles be, is not here mentioned; but Gen. 17. they be, (for to speak of *Circumcision* before the Covenant; it is but a seal to a blank) where the Lord expresseth himself thus, saying, *I will stablish my Covenant between me and thee, and thy Seed after thee, in their Generations, for an everlasting Covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy Seed after thee.* As for other parts of the Covenant, they were more properly given unto himself, as to be *exceeding fruitful*, and to be the *Father of many Nations, to inherit the Land of Canaan, &c.* those things were more peculiarly proper unto *Abraham*, though they have also moral and universal use and force in all the Faithful, whom the Lord doth make fruitful, and giveth them a Nail in his Tabernacle. In the Covenant these three things are implied:

1. God gave himself to be a God unto *Abraham*, and to his Seed: This is such an Argument of the strength and wisdom of men and Angels not unfold: It is a Catechism-point, and by



way of Catechism to be opened, (as the Lord hath revealed it) I mean, plainly, and familiarly.

2. God did receive *Abraham*, and his Seed, to be his People: this is implied, and necessarily inferred by the rule of Relatives: for if God do give himself to be a God to *Abraham*, and to his Seed, and doth not firstly require it of *Abraham* and of his Seed that they should give up themselves to be his People, then it must of necessity follow, that the Lord will undertake to receive them to be a People unto himself, and so he will perform both his own part of the Covenant, and *Abrahams* part also, according to what we read, Deut. 7. 6, 7, 8. The Lord thy God hath chosen thee to be a special People unto himself: Not because ye were in number more than any People, (for ye were the fewest of all People) but because he loved you, and would keep the Oath which he had sworn unto your Fathers, therefore hath he brought you out with a mighty hand, &c. when as they were in a land of Idols, and the Lord lifted up his hand to have destroyed them there; yet he remembered, and wrought for his own Names sake: So that though they were far off yet the Lord (to make good his Covenant) brought them out of Egypt, and so from one Covenant to another: by all which things it doth appear that the Lord will keep our part of the Covenant also; and this is necessarily implied, in that he promisseth to be a God unto *Abraham*, and to his Seed, and there is no Restipulation on *Abrahams* part; we see this likewise held forth, Deut. 29. 1. 13. where the Lord entereth into another Covenant with them in the Land of *Moab*, besides the Covenant which he made with them in *Horeb*; and in this Covenant he doth establish them to be a People unto himself as well as give himself unto them to be their God

ver. 13. And as God required it of them to Circumcise the outward man, even the foreskin of their children; so he will also Circumcise them, taking possession of them, and Circumcising their hearts, taking away the stoniness of them, and so fitting them to be a Temple for himself to dwell in.

3. The Lord in this Covenant taketh the chiefest of *Abrahams* Seed, even the Lord Jesus Christ, to be the Mediator and Surety of the Covenant, and unto him do all the Promises belong; so the Apostle doth expound it, Gal. 3. 16. *Unto Abraham and to his Seed were the Promises made: He saith not, And to his seeds, as of many, but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ.* And so by him are all the Promises and Blessings of the Covenant conveyed unto Abraham, and to his seed, (his faithful seed) all the world over: and therefore he is called the *Mediator of a better Covenant*, Heb. 7. 22. meaning the Covenant of Grace, Heb. 3. 6. These three things do contain the sum of the Covenant of Grace, and of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and would therefore be plainly discovered unto Christians: As,

1. What is the meaning of this, that God gave himself unto Abraham?

2. How doth he take Abraham, and his seed, and make them his People?

3. How doth he take Jesus Christ, and make him the surety of the Covenant between them both? For the Covenant is established, and so is a firm, and sure, and everlasting Covenant: Now in this gift, that God gave himself unto Abraham, Observe three things,

1. The *Blessing* given.

2. The *Order* in which it was given.

3. The *Manner* of giving it.

1. In the Blessing given: When God doth by Covenant give himself to be a God, it doth imply two things.

1. That God doth give himself, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost; the whole Nature of God, and all the persons of the Godhead, with all the Attributes of that Nature, and all the Offices of those Persons: For it is not a confused God, that vanisheth away in a general imagination, but God distinctly considered in his *Persons, Attributes, Properties, &c.* thus the Lord giveth himself to Abraham and to his seed: *I will be a Father unto you,* 2 Cor. 6. 28. and that is not spoken to the Jews only, but unto all the Israel of God: He giveth the Son also, Isa. 9. 6. *Unto us a Son is born, &c.* and God so loved the World, that he gave his only begotten Son: Joh. 3. 16. And for the Holy Spirit, *This is my Covenant with them, saith the Lord, (Isa. 59. 21.) My Spirit that is upon thee, and my words that I have put into thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy seed, nor out of the mouth of thy seeds seed from henceforth, and for ever:* And this is it which the Apostle also saith, Gal. 4. 6. *God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba Father:* thus the Lord giveth himself unto his servants from one Generation to another. If therefore the Lord God the Father give himself, he will not be wanting to draw his People unto the Son, John 6. 44. *No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him:* And what is the chief business, and work that the Son hath to do about us? No man can have fellowship with the Father, but he must have fellowship with Jesus Christ; so our Saviour himself saith, John 14. 6. *No man can come unto the Father but by me:* this



this therefore the Lord Jesus Christ will do for all the Elect Seed of *Abraham*: he will open their eyes to see, that the Father did not draw them to Damnation, nor utter desolation, but unto Salvation by him: this hath he promised to do. And if it be the work of the Spirit of God to establish us both in the Father and the Son, then will he *convince the World of Sin, of Righteousness, and of Judgment,* John 16. 8 to 11. and so will stablish our hearts in the Comforts of the Lord our God; and this is that which the Apostle prayeth for the Ephesians, chap. 3. 16. *That the Lord would grant unto them according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his spirit in the inner man:* and hence it cometh to pass, that what the Lord would have us to do, he is present by his Spirit to teach us, and to strengthen us, and so to do it for us: All these things doth the Lord work for *Abraham*, and for his Seed; so that look what is meet for a Father to do, and for a Brother to do, or for the Spirit of God to do, that will the Lord do unto his Elect ones; and so he giveth all his Attributes, and they are even God himself; and therefore when *Moses* desired to see his Glory (and he desired it from the Grace that God had shewed him) Exod. 34. 6. the Lord proclaimed his Name before him, *Jehovah, Jehovah, Strong, Merciful, and Gracious, Long-suffering, and abundant in Goodness and Truth:* thus doth the Lord give himself, and all the Persons in the Godhead (as they are called) and *Attributes*, they are no more, nor other then God himself.

2. And as God himself is implied; so when God is given by Covenant; all the Ordinances, and Creatures, and Works of God are given also;

For so it was in all Covenants of old time; when *Jehosophat* maketh a Covenant with *Abab* King of Israel, 2 Kings 22. 4. then, *I am as thou art, and my Reins as thy Reins, and my horses as thy horses, and all that he hath is for Ababs service; as the King goeth, so goeth his strength; So thus it doth come to pass, that if the Lord of Hosts be for us, and give himself unto us, then also doth he give us his annual Election, and Redemption, and whatsoever he hath wrought for the Salvation of his Elect: He hath not forsaken his Nation, (Psal. 147. 20.) but only with the Israel of God, unto them hath he given his Laws, and shewed them his Judgments: And for his Creatures, they are all given to be for his people, to whom he hath given himself: If God be a God unto *Abraham*, then shall all Gods People be for him; *Melchisedech* shall bless him; *Anar, Eshcol*, and *Al-mura* shall be confederates with him. The Sun, Moon, and Stars, shall fight in their courses for the People of God: the Sea shall give way unto them, to pass through it on dry land: *What ailed you, ye Stream of Jordan, to go backward? Why, all the Creatures of God must stoop unto the People of God; when he is in Covenant with them: this is that which the Lord promiseth unto his People, Hol. 2. 18. to 22. when the Lord shall marry them to him in faithfulness. In that day (saith the Lord) I will make a Covenant for them with the beasts of the field, and with the Fowls of the Heaven, and with the creeping things of the ground; and I will break the bow, and the sword, and the battell out of the earth, and I will make them to lye down safely. And it shall come to pass in that day, I will hear the Heavens, and they shall hear the Earth, and the Earth shall bear the Corn, and the Flax, and the Oyl, and they shall bear Fozrill.**

whether Paul, or Apollo, or Cephas, or the World, or  
 life or death, or things present, or things to come, all are  
 yours, 1 Cor. 3. 22. This is the large gift of Gods  
 Covenant: Nay, and (which is wonderful, and  
 beyond all comprehension) when I say all the Crea-  
 tures and Ordinances of God are ours, the very ex-  
 pression of the phrasedoth imply, that the Lord gi-  
 veth himself to be the Staff and Strength of them, so  
 that you shall see the presence of God in them; he  
 will not only give a man Wife, and Children, and  
 Ordinances and Providences, but he himself will  
 be in all these, and bless his People in the enjoyment  
 of them all, so as that they shall enjoy God in all;  
 Psal. 16. 5, 6. *The Lord is the Portion of mine inheri-  
 tance.* He saw the Lord in what he did enjoy; and  
 when he had any thing, it was in God; and when  
 he wanted any thing, it was supplied in him. The  
 like did Jacob find, when his brother Esau came  
 against him with 400 men, and the Lord turned him  
 from the fierceness of his wrath; Here was the Co-  
 venant of Abraham; the Lord gave him the mouth,  
 and arms, and tears of his brother Esau; What  
 saith Jacob to all this? Gen. 33. 10. *I have seen  
 thy face as though I had seen the face of God:* He saw  
 the power and mercy of God in changing the coun-  
 tenance of his elder Brother: and that is it which  
 sweeteneth all that a man doth enjoy; the loving  
 kindness of God in all, is the Blessing of all: and this  
 likewise doth Jacob acknowledg, Gen. 33. 5. *These  
 are he children which God of his Grace hath given me;*  
 and so he looked at them, as Gods Wives, and Chil-  
 dren, and Servants, and Cattel; and this is the ve-  
 ry life of the Covenant of Grace, when as the Lord  
 is wrapped up in all his Blessings, when as he giveth  
 Himself, and in Himself, his Christ, and in Christ,

Peter



*Peter, and Paul, and all things unto his Church. This is the main thing given, God himself, the God of the Covenant, his Persons, Nature, Ordinances, Providences, and now Abraham is made the Lord of the world, and so the Apostle doth interpret it, Rom. 4. 13. The Promise that he should be heir of the world, was not to Abraham, nor to his Seed through the Law, but through the righteousness of Faith; and this is that which Abraham did receive, in receiving the Lord to be his God.*

2. In the order of giving the Covenant, there is something to be observed :

1. God giveth first, and not the Creature; it was not *Abraham* that gave unto God first; for which of all the Creatures shall offer a Covenant unto the mighty God? *Rom. 11. 35. Who hath given unto him first? and it shall be recompensed unto him again;* the Lord hath the pre-eminence in giving; for what should *Abraham* give unto God, if God give not something unto him first? he is the first giver.

2. He is also the first thing in order that is given: For doth he give the world first? or Ordinances first? or any other spiritual or temporal blessings first? No doubtless, the Lord is the first thing that he giveth by his Covenant, and with himself all things else also; *Rom. 8. 32.* and there is the pre-cedency of Jesus Christ; he is given, and in him all spiritual blessings, as the Apostle saith, *Ephes. 1. 3. Blessed be God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ Jesus.* And this for the order in giving the Covenant, not obedience first, nor faith first, nor any thing else first, but Himself is *Donum primum, & primum*, and in him all his goodness.

3. For

3. For the Manner of giving; in that he giveth Himself, there is implied both the freedome and eternity of the gift. Firmness therefore, and that unto eternity. In that he giveth himself, it must of necessity be done freely; for what can any creature give to purchase God? if a man could give thousands of worlds, they were not enough to redeem or purchase one soul; and if he had millions of worlds to give, what were they all to purchase so great a gift as God himself is? therefore it must needs be of free gift; for the creature can do nothing to prevent God: God indeed may give with a purpose to receive back again; but he looketh to receive no more then what he first giveth us, and giveth us strength of Will and Deed to give him back again. He required this of *Abraham*, that he should walk before him and be upright, *Gen. 17. 1.* But the very truth is, though *Abraham* shall perform these things in an Evangelical manner; yet God himself doth undertake in this Covenant to be the Author and Finisher both of his Faith, and Obedience, *Heb. 12. 2.* And this doth argue the marvellous freedome of the Covenant of Grace: for the Lord offereth it out of his Grace, without the foresight of Faith, or Works; for he undertaketh to give both Will and Deed of his good pleasure, *Phil. 2. 13.*

*Obiect.* But it may be said, Did not the Lord except it, that he should give himself back again, or else the Lord would not give himself?

*Ans.* Truly then it had not been of Free-grace: But as you see sometimes great Princes will take in a neighbour-Nation into a league with them, and not tell them of it: so doth the Lord deal with his elect ones; he maketh a Covenant with Christ,  
and

and taketh us into that Covenant, otherwise he should not at all intend it effectually, nor ever give himself unto us; for we are not able to give our selves unto him till he first take us. For if *Abraham* did give himself, it was because God did take him first; and therefore it is that the Apostle telleth us that the Lord took hold of *Paul*, that he might take hold upon the Lord, *Phil. 3. 12. I follow after, if that I may apprehend that, for which I also am apprehended of Christ Jesus*: is not he the Father that hath bought us? hath not he made us, and established us? *Deut. 32. 6.* If we give up our selves unto the Lord, it is because the Lord hath taken hold upon our hearts first.

*Object.* But doth not the Lord require of him to circumcise his seed the eighth day?

*Answer.* So he doth indeed, but the Lord giveth him that also: God the Father seeth it needful for their everlasting Salvation, therefore he doth give him Circumcision, and giveth him the Grace to Circumcise his Children: I know that the Lord doth call for many things under a Covenant of Grace, but then the Lord doth

1. Work those things in them: And,
2. He will have them know, that those things are nothing, without the working of his Grace. It is true, he may Circumcise *Isaac*, but who shall Circumcise the heart of *Isaac*? it is a small matter to Circumcise the Flesh: So it is a small matter for us to Baptize with Water; but who must wash us from our sins, save only the Lord our God? so that he doth secretly intimate, that what his poor servants do outwardly, he would do it inwardly and effectually. The Children of Israel shall at the Lords commandment, march about the City *Jeri-*



cho. seven dayes together, and not speak a word, and hereby the walls of the City shall fall down flat; of what use were these weapons to such an end? what would the Lord shew his People hereby? hereby he teacheth them to know by what ability and power to bring mighty things to pass: they shall do duties as the Lord commandeth them, but he himself will breath in them to make them effectual. For though we do never so much, yet we cannot reach unto the accomplishment of any good thing; not by might, nor by strength, but by my Spirit: the Lord therefore by his Spirit must work all our works for us: Here is the freeness of Gods Covenant, in that the Lord giveth himself first, Jer. 32. 40. *I will make an everlasting Covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them to do them good: but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me.* You may speak of Conditions in this kind; but the Lord doth undertake both for his own part, and for our parts also: for as the Covenant is free, so the Lord will freely maintain, and preserve all his Elect, and all from the immutable Nature of God; it is not possible that God should lye: *I am Jehovah, I change not, Mal. 3. 6.* therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed: Hence springeth our eternity, and perseverance unto it (Rom. 11. 29.) *for the gifts and callings of God are without repentance: And I am persuaded* (saith the Apostle Paul) *that he that hath begun this work, will perfect it untill the day of Jesus Christ, Phil. 1. 6.* The Lord took your Father Abram, and brought him from the other side of the Flood, Josh. 24. 3. and he being called, obeyed, Heb. 11. 8. Thus (mind ye) the Lord dealeth in the Covenant of Grace, he looketh towards those that look not towards him, as is held forth, Hos. 3. 3. where the Lord biddeth the

Pro-

Prophet lov'd a Woman that was an Adulteress, and say unto her, *Thou shalt be for me, and I will be for thee*; this is a branch of the Covenant, when the Lord doth undertake to receive *Abraham* and his Seed unto himself; his giving himself unto them doth breed a reciprocal returning of them unto him. Now it may be demanded,

*Quest.* How the Lord did take *Abraham* and his seed to be his People?

*Ans.* By a double Act: As,

1. Of Preparation, not on *Abraham's* part, nor on his seeds part, but on his *own part*, the Lord prepared them.

2. The Lord did invest him with the Blessings of this Covenant.

1. For Preparation: the Lord prepareth them by a double work of his Spirit, which are manifest in all the Seed of *Abraham*.

1. By a spirit of Bondage, whereby he cutteth off the Seed of *Abraham* from all worldly intanglements and delights: thus God took *Abraham*, and brought him from beyond the Flood, and so doth he take men off from their Countreyes and Fathers houses; he separates them from all such things, that he might draw them unto himself: thus he dealt with the children of Israel, and called them to be a singular People unto himself, Deut. 7. 6, 7, 8. Thus doth the Lord deal with all those whom he receiveth to be a people unto himself: By this spirit of Bondage, he draweth them from all their sinful lusts, and passions, so as that they can find no life in them, nor any hope of mercy at all in any thing: by this Bondage, the Lord setteth home unto the Consciences of men, the weight and danger of their sins, and bindeth them under the sense of his wrath unto

unto fear of Damnation. The Romans first received the Spirit of Bondage to fear, before ever they came to receive the Spirit of Adoption, Rom. 8. 25. But thus the Lord doth even shut a Soul out of doors, that he may open to him another and a better way.

2. The Lord also prepareth his People by a Spirit of Burning, which upon a Spirit of Bondage he doth shed abroad into the hearts of men. This we read of, Mal. 4. 1. *Behold, the day cometh that shall burn as an Oven, and all the proud, and all that do wickedly, shall be as stubble, and the day that cometh shall burn them up, and it shall leave them neither root nor branch.* It is spoken of the Ministry of John Baptist, which did burn like an Oven against all the Scribes and Pharisees, and left them neither the root of *Abrahams Covenant*, nor the branch of their own good Works. He cutteth them off from the Covenant of *Abraham*, Matth. 3. 9. *I think not to say within your selves that you have Abraham to your Father; for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham; and so by cutting them off from the root, he leaveth them no ground to trust on.* From their good Works also, the Lord Jesus Christ cutteth them off, Mat. 6. 2. *When thou dost thine alms, sound not a Trumpet before thee as the Hypocrites do, that they may have the glory of men; and ver. 5. When thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the Hypocrites are, &c. and v. 16. When ye Fast, ye shall not be as the Hypocrites are, of a sad countenance, &c.* This was a Spirit of Burning which the Lord conveyed by the Ministry of Christ, and of John Baptist, to burn up all the Hypocrites like stubble; and the beauty of their works were blasted by it: and this is Gods usual manner of dealing.

Now



Now there are many under a spirit of Bondage, that never came under a spirit of burning; and they being convinced of sin, and of the danger thereof, yet hope to wrestle it out, and work it out by their own performances, till the Spirit of Burning come and consume all that false confidence. But when the Spirit of Burning cometh, he then blasphemeth all the stems and branches of their righteousness, and burns up all that a man hath wrought, or can work. And this is that which the Prophet Esay, chap. 4. 4. speaketh of, that *the Lord will purge away the filth of the Daughter of Zion, with a Spirit of Judgment and of Burning*; the one is a Spirit of Sanctification, and the other is a consuming fire, which forceth them not to build any comfort upon any works that they have done: this may Hypocrites reach unto in their judgments, so as that they may be convinced that they have neither root within them, nor branch growing upon them; and yet in the mean while they may not come unto a Spirit of Adoption: but hereby also the Lord useth to prepare his people. Some bless themselves in worldly courses, and never come unto a Spirit of bondage. Some do find comfort in their performances, and never saw the vanity of their own righteousness: But there are those whom the Lord doth carry further, unto a spirit of burning, even unto a sensible feeling of Gods wrath, burning against whatsoever is as stubble, (and such is a mans own gifts, and parts, and worth) so that now the poor soul findeth that he hath no Root, nor any sure mercy of the Covenant of Grace, that he can rest upon: no green branch of righteousness remaining, but all is blasted and broken in pieces, according to what the Prophet Esay saith, chap. 40. 6, 7. *all flesh is grass, and all the goodliness thereof is as the flower of the field*.

the flower of the field: the grass withereth, and the flower fadeth; because the Spirit of the Lord bloweth upon it: and so the Lord cometh to leave a man neither Root nor Branch: For by a spirit of Bondage the Lord blasteth all flesh: but when it cometh unto the goodliness of flesh, that is consumed by a spirit of Burning.

2. As God thus prepareth us for himself: so he doth give himself unto us, and taketh possession of us by his blessed Spirit: the Father giveth himself and his Son by his blessed Spirit, (for the spirit it is by which he doth visit the hearts of his people) and this is the main Blessing of the Covenant of Grace. For the better clearing of it, it may be demanded.

*Quest.* How doth the Lord give himself unto his People, and his people back again to receive him?

*Ans.* 1. They being thus prepared, the Spirit of God taketh up his seat in the soul, by making it a Temple unto himself, in the Name of the Father, and of the Son; and so are they made an habitation of God through the Spirit, Ephes. 2. 22: Because ye are Sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, &c. Gal, 4. 6. (He speaketh not of sons by actual Regeneration, but by Gods eternal Counsel.) The same Spirit is also called the Comforter, whom Jesus Christ hath promised to send, Joh. 16. 7, 8, 9. If I depart, I will send you the Comforter; and when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, of righteousness, and of judgment: of sin, because they believe not in me: this the Holy Ghost convinceth men of, to be the greatest misery of the soul, that they have not believed upon Jesus Christ. And look as a talent of gold, or some weighty metal falling into a vessel of water, dasheth out all that

is in the vessel, to make room for it self : so the Lord Jesus Christ coming into the soul, dasheth out all watry confidences, and maketh room for himself. And in every deed, because the heart of man is not only like unto water, but is hard as Ice, and strong ; therefore the Spirit of God cometh like fire, and melteth the iron stone of the heart, and softneth it into flesh ; so that now the soul is utterly at a loss, not only in regard of his sins, but in regard of his best works also ; and is most of all convinced of his unbelief. Now this holy Spirit of God being thus shed abroad into the heart, at the very first entrance of it into the soul, as it doth chiefly convince the soul of unbelief ; so,

2. The same Spirit *worketh Faith* in the soul, to yeeld himself unto the Lord, to receive the Lord Jesus Christ ; and this is a true saving work ; he now submitteth unto the will of God : so that the Spirit of God becometh unto the soul not only as a Spirit of *burning*, to consume all that is like stubble ; but doth also melt the iron stone of the heart, and softneth it into *flesh*, that the word may take deep impression in it. Now there is room for Jesus Christ, now Faith is wrought there ; and now a soul can plead with God by Faith in Prayer : he seeth there is no former safe hold of his Covenant that he can plead, nor any righteousness of his own, but such as hypocrites will quarrell for, and rise up to maintain, as they did against *John Baptist*, pleading their covenant, and their righteousness : with these things a poor soul is not satisfied : *but unto you that fear my Name, shall the Son of righteousness arise with beak and in his wings, &c.* Mal. 4. 2. Herein is implied such a reverent fear, as distrusting our selves, giveth all the honour to the Lord Jesus : this Fear



of the Lord accompanieth Faith, and is of like nature to it: both of them distrusting our selves, and both of them giving all honour to Christ; the one out of confidence in him, the other out of reverence to him.

Thus it is in our *Effectual calling*; the Spirit of God taking possession in our hearts, and working this Faith in us, thereby we submit unto the Lord; and this is Faith in Jesus Christ, that maketh us one with Christ: for our effectual calling bringeth us to be one with him, 1 Cor. i. 9. *God is faithful, by whom ye were called into the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ.* This fellowship standeth in two things: 1. In the unity of the Spirit, 1 Cor. 6. 17. *He that is joined to the Lord is one Spirit.*

2. In a *liberty* from our parts. So that by Believing this is the first thing we do, we yeeld unto the work of God; when this stronger man cometh, to wit, Christ by his Spirit, we yeeld up all our armour to him; and herein standeth our coming on to be in Christ, and in God the Father, by this Spirit of God that taketh possession of the heart, and hath not only burnt up root and branch of our Legal righteousness, but hath also melted us unto a soft frame to yeeld up our selves unto the Lord; and now we are fit for any duty, the Lord having possessed us with his powerful presence: herein lyeth our effectual calling; and this is true spiritual union between the Lord and our souls. Now this Faith thus wrought in our Effectual calling, is not built upon any conditional promise of Grace preexistent in us, nor can it be built upon any: but upon some absolute free Promise of God unto the soul, according to what we read, *Isai. 43. 22. to 25. Thou hast not called upon me O Jacob, but thou hast been weary of me O*

Israel: thou hast not brought me the small cattel of thy burnt-offerings; neither hast thou honoured me with thy sacrifices: I have not caused thee to serve with an offering, nor wearied thee with incense: thou hast bought me no sweet cane with money, neither hast thou filled me with the fat of thy sacrifices: but thou hast made me to serve with thy sins, thou hast wearied me with thine iniquities: I, even I, am he that blot out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins. In all this we see the absolute freeness of the Grace of God. But if the Promise be conditional, it is a condition subsequent to Faith, not antecedent before it.

*Object.* You will say, Though some may be converted by such an absolute Promise, yet some others mans Faith may be built upon a conditional Promise, and the condition preexistent.

*Ans.* I Pray you consider it: If it be 'a Condition, it is to some good Qualification or other, some good work or other of the Spirit of God in the heart of a Christian. Was this work wrought before Conversion, or after? Every Christian knoweth, that all works before conversion are but dross, and dung: to apply promises to such works were indeed to build upon a sandy foundation. What say you then to works after conversion? All works after conversion are fruits of Faith; and if they proceed from faith, then faith went before, then a mans faith was not built upon a conditional promise; how is it possible that it should? when all works after conversion, are either fruits of Faith, or else they are no true sanctification; then faith went before in order of Nature, and so was not built upon works, but works upon it.

Our Faith closeth with Christ upon a promise of

Free

Free-Grace; otherwise (as saith Calvin. *Inst.* 1. 3. c. 2. §. 29.) my faith would always be trembling and wavering as my works be. Upon a promise of Free-Grace therefore my Faith is built, as upon the promise of God in Christ reconciling the world unto himself, 2 Cor. 5. 18, 19. The word is (it may be) spoken outwardly unto all Christians: but if God do set it home particularly unto any Soul, that man receiveth this Gift of God, and it is made his own: First he beleeve the promise of Free-Grace, and then afterward come other promises, that do bear witness unto the right application of that promise unto the soul: but I am first built upon a promise of Free-grace, or else there is no true closing with Jesus Christ: well then, being thus united unto Christ, from this union with Christ do flow all other blessings and benefits of the Covenant of Grace: for hence springeth communion with Christ in all *spiritual blessings*, that the Lord hath wrought for us in him; and they are two of them *Relative blessings* (as they are called by Divines) and two of them *positive blessings*. The two former are laid up in Gods own Hand, and are not created in us: the other two positive Blessings are created in us.

1. For the uncreated blessings,

They are {  
 1. Adoption.  
 2. Justification.

And they spring immediately (*simul & semel*) from the former union with Christ; for as soon as ever the Spirit of God is in our hearts, and hath wrought Faith, that we do not spurn against Jesus Christ, but receive him, now is the Divine Nature of Christ



Christ in us, and we are now become the sons of God, as Christ himself is. Look as in a mans first natural conception, as soon as ever one doth live, there is an heir of *Adam*, even so soon as the soul liveth: so it is in the new spiritual Birth; as soon as the Holy Ghost cometh, and hath wrought this Faith, now is the Seed of God in us, the Life of Christ, and the Spirit of God; and now we are the Sons of God, as we read Joh. 1. 12. *As many as received him, to them he gave power to be the sons of God.* Immediately upon this union with Christ, we are Sons by *Adoption*; and as we are adopted, so likewise our sins are now imputed unto Christ, and his righteousness unto us, and so our persons are justified. For how, and when was *Adams* sin imputed unto us? Psal. 51. 5. *Behold, I was shapen in iniquity, in sin did my mother conceive me:* So soon as ever there was life, it was the life of *Adam*, and then the imputation of *Adams* sin falleth immediately upon the soul. So when we do receive Christ by this living Faith, having the Life of Christ in us, we have the righteousness of Christ (the second *Adam*) imputed unto us: For what doth the childe in the womb? though it doth neither good nor evil, but is meere passive, yet sinful it is, and a child of *Adam*: So also in this our Regeneration, the soul receiveth Christ by that faith which the Lord hath wrought in it, whereby also it is made capable of the privilege of *Adoption*; and so the Lord accounteth us his children, and imputeth the Righteousness of his Son unto us, whereby we are justified. These things dwell in Gods Bosome, and the meaning of them is afterwards revealed unto the soul; but communicated they be, both that of *Adoption*, and this of *Justification*, by this gift of faith wrought in us.

But we are still upon the first work of conversion, wherein a Christian is only passive, and receptive; and truly it must needs be so in the first work of God upon us.

2. Now for the *Positive blessings* that are wrought in us:

They are } 1. *Sanctification.*  
                  } 2. *Glorification.*

1. When we are called, then are we *Sanctified*, then are we *Glorified*, 1 Cor. 1. 2. as in our natural conception, as soon as ever the child liveth, *Adam's* sin is first imputed, & then there is a proneness in it to carry it captive unto sin, and to make it backward unto any goodness: So when the life of Christ is dispenced unto the soul, now the Lord comes to convey with it Justification, or pardon of sin, and when there is a promise in a Justified person to walk in the spirit; Gal. 5. 25. *If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. By Faith our hearts come to be purified,* Acts 15. 9. And the same Spirit quickneth us unto holy duties, so that we live, yet not we, but Christ liveth in us; neither are we only in his hand, but the Spirit sanctifying, draweth us into an holy confederacy to serve God in Family, Church, and Common-wealth; and this Sanctification groweth, and encreaseth more and more, 2 Cor. 7. 1. 1 Thes. 4. 1. & 5. 23.

2. The other positive gift is *Glorification*, which we read of, Rom. 8. 30. *Whom he called, them also he justified, and whom he justified, them also he glorified:* this the Apostle Peter mentioneth, 1 Pet. 5. 10. *The God of all grace hath called us into his eternal glory in Christ*

*Christ Jesus*: And in truth, he hath begun the work from the time that he first he began to sanctifie us, 2 Tim. 1. 9. *He hath saved us, and called us*: from the very first time that God worketh upon the soul graciously, there is a glorious work in that soul; and others may see it, though himself sometimes seeth nothing that he hath received. Thus we see the second branch of the doctrine opened, How the Lord doth receive *Abraham* and *his seed* unto himself, preparing them by a spirit of *Bondage*, and of *Burning*, and then taking possession of them savingly by the *inhabitation* of the blessed spirit; the same spirit begetting Faith, we are alive in *Jesus Christ*, and so come to be *Adopted*, and *Justified* in him: the same Faith which receiveth Adoption and Justification, doth begin to stir a little, and to breath forth into gracious desires, and some holy mourning, and beginneth now to put forth such works as the holy Ghost carrieth the soul an end in; working all our works in us, and for us.

3. Now for the third and last part of the Doctrine: The Lord took the *chiefest* of *Abrahams* seed to be the *Mediator* of this Covenant, unto whom all the Promises were made, Gal. 3. 16.

*Quest.* How did the Lord constitute *him* so to be?  
*Ans.* 1. By a double Act: first, by receiving *Jesus Christ* the Son of the Virgin *Mary*, to be one Person with the second in Trinity, hereby laying a ground of a firm Mediation between God and us: for *Jesus Christ* being of Gods Nature, therefore he will be faithful unto God; and being of our Nature, therefore he will be compassionate towards us. And here is the root of all the life and power of this Mediation, to wit, this Personal Union of the Son of man, with with the second Person in Trinity,



y, which is a firm and everlasting Union.

2. By Gods giving him to be a *Covenant*, Isa. 42.

*I will give thee for a Covenant of the People, for a Light of the Gentiles.* What is meant hereby? the

Lord meaneth that he giveth him to be a *Mediator* of this Covenant :

1. To receive from God all the *Promises* and *gracious gifts*, whatsoever is requisite for him to be *King*, *Priest*, and *Prophet* ; and all these things he receiveth from the hand of the Father, Col. 1. 19. For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell : thus he becometh a plentiful Redeemer. And as the Lord gave him to be a *Covenant*, so he giveth him also to work all things needful for our Redemption ; partly by his *passion*, and *obedience* unto the Death of the Cross, Phil. 2. 8. and partly by fulfilling all the righteousness of the Law, Mat. 3. 15. The Lord Jesus Christ did fully accomplish whatsoever was requisite for him to accomplish in his own Person.

2. He doth perform all things needful for the *Application* of this Redemption unto our souls, Isa. 26. 12. And to this end, he it is that sheddeth abroad his Spirit into our hearts, Joh. 15. 26. & 16. 7. and when this blessed Spirit cometh, he applyeth unto the soul all this gracious Redemption of Jesus Christ, by giving Jesus Christ and all the Fruits of his redemption, and by working all those blessed works, that the souls of his people come to be partakers of ; and so performeth all those conditions that are required on our parts : if it be needful for us to have *Faith*, he will work it in us ; if it be needful for us to live a *life of Faith*, he will help us so to live, for it is not of our selves, it is the gift of God : Eph. 2. 9. Thus hath the Lord made him a  
complete

compleat Mediator of this holy Covenant; and whatsoever we receive, we receive from him: for unto him first, as the head of the Church, are all blessings given; and unto us, all promises in him are *Yea, and in him Amen*, 2 Cor. 1. 20. for though Christ be not a sinner in his own Person, yet in respect of his Members, he is many times lost in them, though not in himself; and poor in them, though not in himself; for us therefore he receiveth the Promises of God; and that is the great security of them, that they are laid up safe in him, and belong unto us if we have union with the Head; and in him we perform whatsoever God requireth; whether we pray, or preach, or hear, we do all in the Name of Jesus Christ, going forth in his strength and power; Col. 3. 17. Thus is the Lord Jesus Christ a firm surety of *this better Covenant*, *stablished upon better Promises*, Heb. 8. 6.

*Diff. 1.* In the first place: This may teach us a broad difference between the Covenant of Works & the Covenant of Grace. In the Covenant of Works

*Diff. 1.* The Lord offereth Himself as a Father, his Son as a Redeemer, his Spirit as a Sanctifier; but this is still upon a condition of obedience: if they shall keep his Law, and obey his voice, then they shall be a peculiar treasure unto him above all people. *Exod. 19. 5. 6.* This also they undertake to do, *Deut. 5. 27.* All about the Lord our God shall speak unto thee, we will hear it, and do it; but, O saith God, that there was such an heart in them, *vers. 29.* When they rebelled, he did not pardon them graciously, but the Angel whom he sendeth with them, he biddeth them *hearken of him, and obey his voice, and provoke him not, for he will not pardon your transgressions, for my name is in him:* In the Covenant of Grace he

will, but not in this: here is indeed a conditional Redeemer and Saviour; and so it is expressed, Isa. 63. 8, 9, 10. *He was their Saviour; in all their affliction he was afflicted, and the Angel of his presence saved them in his love, &c. But they rebelled, and vexed his holy Spirit, therefore he was turned to be their enemy, and fought against them: with many of them God was not well pleased (almost with none of them) but overthrew them in the wilderness:* Thus in the Covenant of Works all is given upon condition of obedience.

*Diff. 2.* The Lord giving himself, his Son, and Spirit upon condition, though it be but to Works, yet he is pleased to receive them into some kind of *Relative Union*, expressed, Jer. 32, 32. *Which my Covenant they brake, although I was an Husband to them.* He was married unto them in Church-Covenant, this was some kind of union: He was their God, and they were his peculiar people; and yet the Lord cast them off, a generation of his wrath, from this Marriage-Covenant between them and him: from this union there springeth a kind of Faith, by which the soul cleaveth unto the Lord in some measure, else there could not be this Marriage-Union; and this Faith is that of which you read, Psal. 106. 12, 13. *They believed his words, they sang his praise; they soon forgot his works; they waited not for his counsel.* So also Exod. 14. 31. it is said, *They believed the Lord, and his servant Moses:* This is that Faith which men may receive, and yet may Apostate from it, spoken of, Heb. 6. 3. to 6. *For awhile some do believe, and in time of temptation fall away,* Luke 8. 13. But all that Faith was never grounded upon any free promise of Grace, but all was built upon *Ordinances, and Duties*, and upon no higher ground. In the



2 Chron. 13. 8, to 12. marvellously strong are the expressions of *Abijah*, when *Jeroboam* came against him; You think to withstand the Kingdome of the Lord in the hand of *David*, &c. Have not you cast out the Priests of the Lord? saith he, &c. But as for us, the Lord is our God, and we have not forsaken him; and the Priests which minister unto the Lord are the Sons of *Aaron*, and the Levites wait upon their business; and they turn unto the Lord every morning, and every Evening, Burnt-Sacrifices, and sweet Incense; the Shew-bread also they set in order upon the pure Table, and the Candlestick of Gold, with the Lamp thereof, to burn every evening: for we keep the charge of the Lord our God, but ye have forsaken him. And behold, God himself is with us for our Captain, and his Priests with sounding Trumpets to cry Alarum against you. O ye children of *Israel*, fight ye not against the Lord God of your Fathers, for you shall not prosper. Thus we see what Faith he did express; and hereupon (verse 18.) the children of *Israel* were brought under, and the children of *Judah* prevailed; and yet this Kings heart was not perfect with the Lord his God: 2 Kings 15. 3. and yet (mind you) a strong confidence he had, that the Lord was with him, and that he would be present with his own Ordinances; there Faith built upon fellowship with Ordinances, like unto that Faith in the Scripture before alledged, Luke 8. 13. Men are affected with the Word, and believe, and find comfort; and all this springeth from that Relative communion which they have with the Lord; they find refreshing in their way and work, and many times take it for the very Seal of the Spirit of God; all which may be, and often is found in Hypocrites: but here is the difference; In a Covenant of Works God giveth him-  
self

self conditionally; in that of Grace, absolutely: in both, he maketh a Covenant, in the one of *Grace*, in the other of *Works*, in which the voice of the Lord is, If you be true to me, then I will not renounce you; and in this Covenant is Faith sound, but it is only built upon such changes as they find in themselves, and will in the end vanish utterly away.

*Diff. 3.* There is a Difference also that springeth from the fruits of these two Covenants in their continuance: for though in the Covenant of Works there be a semblance of *Justification*, and *Adoption*, and a kind of *Sanctification*, yet they endure but for a season; and therefore he calleth them *Leammis*, for ye are not my people; and *Lo-rubamah*, for I will no more have mercy, though sometimes they were his People, and he then had mercy on them: they may also have pardon of sin for a season, *Psal. 78. 37, 38.* Being full of compassion, he forgave their iniquity, and destroyed them not: yet they were such whose heart was not upright with him, neither were they steadfast in his Covenant: this is plainly held forth in the Parable, *Mat. 18. 23* to the end: when the servant had not wherewith to pay his Lord, he fell down and worshipped him, saying, Lord have patience with me, and I will pay thee all, his Lord was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt: but when he had not like compassion on his fellow-servant, then his Lord was wroth, and charged all his iniquities upon him, and cast him into Prison until he should pay all that was due unto him: So that this pardon is not everlasting, but only respite from outward punishment, and from inward pangs of Conscience many times; and this they take for pardon of sin, and acceptance in Jesus Christ, when indeed they are deluded: So likewise their

*San-*

*Sanctification* is but for a moment, they come at last some of them to tread under foot the Blood of the Covenant wherewith they were sanctified, Heb. 10. 29. For Christ was but a conditional Redeemer unto them: they had only gifts of Tongues, and utterance, and wisdom, and discerning of Spirits, and a common Faith: which things are not that Sanctification which is a fruit of Saving Faith; but only such gifts as do sanctifie them unto the work of the Ministry perhaps, or Magistracy, and fit them for household government, or the like: and so much positive work there is in them, as doth make them in some measure fit for the work, or service which they are called unto. For a little more explaining of this:

*Ques.* Is it the same with that Sanctification which is in Gods children?

*Ans.* God forbid. All the men in the world are divided into two Ranks; Godly, or Ungodly; Righteous or Wicked: of Wicked men, two sorts; some are notoriously wicked, others are Hypocrites: of Hypocrites two sorts (and you shall find them in the Church of God) some are *washed Swine*, others are *Cows*.

1. The *Swine* are those of whom our Saviour Christ saith, that they return unto their wallowing in the mire: like unto these are such men, as at the hearing of some Sermon have been Romack-sick of their sins, and have rejected their wicked courses, but yet the *Swines* heart remaineth in them; and as a Swine, when he cometh where the puddle is, will readily lye down in it; so will these men wallow in the puddle of uncleanness, when their Conscience is not pricked for the present: but these are a grosser kind of Hypocrites.

2. There



2. There is another sort that go far beyond these; and those are Goats, so called, Mat. 25. 32, 33: and these are clean beasts, such as chew the cud, meditate upon Ordinances; and they divide the hoof; they live both in a general, and particular calling, and will not be idle: they are also fit for Sacrifice: what then is wanting? Truly they are not sheep all this while, they are but Goats; yet a Goat doth sooth that which a Swine will readily break into: but where then do they fall short of the nature of sheep? A difference there is, which standeth principally in these particulars.

1. The Goat is of a *capricious Nature*, and affecteth eminency; *his gate also is straight*, Prov. 30. 31. ~~For~~ reckoneth the Hee-Goat among the four things that are comely in going.

2. And they are full of Ambition; they cannot abide swamps, and holes, but will be climbing upon the tops of Mountains; there is not that plain, lowly, sheep-like frame, that attendeth unto the voice of the shepherd to be led up and down into fresh Pastures: they attend upon their own ends, and will outshoot God in his own bow; and therefore when they have done many things for Christ, he will say unto them, *Depart from me ye workers of iniquity*: more eminency they did affect, then they were guided unto: Thus it was with *Jehoiada*, who in his zeal for God, thought to promote himself; and herein he will not be perswaded of his sin, and therefore walking along in crooked wayes, the Lord led him forth with evil doers; he cometh at length to cleave unto the sins of *Jerobam* the son of *Nebat*, who made Israel to sin: notwithstanding you may receive a Goat into Church-fellowship for all his capricious Nature, and he will be a clean creature,

creature, and of much good use: the *five foolish*, (Mat. 25. 2.) were all of them *Virgins*, all of them abhorring Idolatry, and all go forth to meet the Bridegroom; and yet they are *foolish*, and never shall you make them wise, to be all for Christ, in him, and from him, only hearing and obeying his voice.

3. They are of a rankish nature all of them, specially the old Goats will have an unfavoury relish, far from the pleasant sweetness that is in a sheep; and herein Hypocrites are greatly different from the sheep of Christ; and many times also they do push with the shoulder the poor sheep of Christ, as the Prophet speaketh, Ezek. 34. 21. *And they will tread the Pastures with their feet, and will be at length muddling the fair waters of the Sanctuary also*: And in their best sanctification they fall far short of a sheep-like frame of spirit, diligently to hear the voice of the shepherd; this will not be found in the sanctification of the best hypocrite under heaven; they may go far, and yet at length fall away; this is no *Arminianism*, but if you search the Scriptures diligently, you will find these things to be true. But such instances deceive the Arminians.

Diff. 4. There is a fourth Difference between the Covenant of Works and of Grace, in respect of the Mediator, Gal. 3. 19. *The Law was given and ordained by Angels in the hand of a Mediator; Moses was a Mediator according to their Works; and this our Saviour telleth the Jews, John 5. 45. You have one that accuseth you, even Moses in whom ye trust*: and as for Jesus Christ, if he be given to be their Redeemer, it is but according to their Works, if they shall obey his voice: but if they shall sin against him, he will overthrow them body and soul into the nethermost Hell.

But now in the Covenant of Grace, Jesus Christ hath obtained a more excellent Ministry, to be the Mediator of a better Covenant, established upon better Promises, Heb. 8. 6. Thus we see in this first Use the difference between the Covenant of Works, and the Covenant of Grace.

Use 2. I might (in the second place) from hence also gather an Argument against the whole Body of *Arminianism*; for they look at no gift of God, but merely upon the Faith, or Works of the creature foreseen: If you speak of Election, they tell you it is of Faith foreseen; if of Glory, it is upon condition of perseverance: but we see how contrary it is unto this truth of God; for he giveth himself first before he giveth any thing else accompanying salvation: he gave us Christ in his eternal Counsel, before Election; and so doth he also in our Effectual calling; not Faith before Christ, to enable us to choose whether we will have him, or not have him: but he is God, and first giveth himself, and with himself, Faith, and so worketh our wills unto himself, not otherwise, leaving it ours to choose whether we will have him to be our God or no. Many things in *Papery* and *Arminianism*, come to be confuted from hence; for in truth they hold forth no more but a Covenant of Works: and if we will not grant Faith and good Works to be the cause of all the blessed gifts of God, they will take it marvellously unkindly; but they were as good deliver unto us another Gospel.

Use 3. This may also serve to teach the people of God to bear a gracious respect unto those that are under a Covenant of Works, and not forthwith to condemn them, as if there were no hope of their salvation: for God never calleth any unto fellow-



ship with himself in a Covenant of Grace, but ordinarily he first bringeth them into a Covenant of Works. The ignorant look to be saved by their good Prayers, and by their good serving of God. After, God may terrifie and humble their souls with the sense of their palpable wickedness. Then they may reform and trust in their performances: and then God may burn up all such false confidence. Therefore those that are under a Covenant of Works, may belong unto the Lord, as well as thy self; pray for them therefore. *Paul* was under a Covenant of Works, *Simeon* prayeth for him; and as most conceive, that Prayer was effectual unto his Conversion, and *Paul* was as dear unto the Lord as *Simeon* himself was. Men under a Covenant of Works, the Lord may bring them home unto himself, by dashing all their Works in pieces, and shewing them the presence of their Spirit: and the Lord will also come and pluck away the caul from their hearts; and then they will have none in heaven but Christ, nor in the earth in comparison of him; and then the Holy Ghost convinceth them of this sin above all their other sins, that they have not believed on Jesus Christ. Do not therefore censure any such, as to say there is no likelihood that they should ever come to have fellowship with Christ: for if the Lord make them to fall down before him, and to yield up their spirits unto the Lord in holy reverence, and fear, these have now received some secret smoking affections (besides a Spirit of burning) which the Lord will not quench.

*Q. 4.* It may serve in the next place to clear up our Judgments in sundry passages that do concern the Covenant of Grace, by Answers unto these six Questions following.

*Quest.*

*Quest. 1.* What is the first Gift that ever the Lord giveth unto his Elect?

*Answer.* First of all he giveth himself: the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit; this is the Foundation: and if you shall lay Faith in the Foundation before these, the Foundation will lye uneasily, and the spirit of a true Christian shall not lye long in peace: Christ must therefore be first, and with him must cometh in to receive him: First he will make Covenant with us, and put his holy Spirit within us, which worketh in us Faith, and Fear, that we never shall depart from him: He giveth us his Son, and all things else in him: he giveth us in him pardon of sins in our Justification, and in him some degrees of glory also, and in him right unto all the Promises of the Covenant; no other Foundation but him: make him first therefore, for he is the first thing given.

*Q. 2.* But whether doth not the Lord give us saving preparations, before Jesus Christ?

*Answer.* Reserving due honour to such gracious and precious Saints, as may be otherwise minded; I confess I do not discern, that the Lord worketh and giveth any saving preparations in the heart, till he give union with Christ; for if the Lord do give any saving qualification before Christ, then the soul may be in the state of Salvation before Christ; and that seemeth to be prejudicial unto the Grace and Truth of Jesus Christ: for if there be no name under heaven given, whereby we must be saved, but only Jesus Christ, nor his Name, but in a way of fellowship with him, then it seemeth to me apparently to follow, that whatsoever saving work there be in the soul, it is not there before Christ be there. It is

John Baptist, was sent to subdue all flesh, by a Spirit

Spirit of Burning, which burneth up carnal confidence in the Covenant of *Abraham*, and all the fruits of righteousness: here were indeed preparations for Christ, but these were not saving, they were still children of wrath: *ye Serpents, ye Generation of Vipers*, notwithstanding all this. Further, *John* did indeed dispense poverty of Spirit, unto which saving promise was made; but then Jesus Christ was there also, whether they knew it, or knew not, that is not greatly material in this Argument. But if the Kingdome of Heaven was there, Jesus Christ was there first, otherwise it will prove dishonourable unto the Name of Christ. Indeed there is a saving preparation before consolation in Christ, and the manifestation of our gracious union with him; but for our first union, there are no steps unto that *Psalm*, *Exod.* 20. &c. but Christ doth prepare his Tabernacle for himself to dwell in. This is in the first place for instruction, concerning what is the first gift which the Lord giveth unto the soul before any work. He giveth spiritual union with his Son: this standeth firm from the tenure of the Covenant, and the nature of it.

*Quest. 2.* In what order the Lord giveth the Covenant, and the blessings of it: whether Faith before them, or those Blessings before Faith be able to apply them?

*Ans.* He doth give himself to work Faith, for Faith can be there; for it is the fruit of the Spirit, in that Faith is wrought in the Soul, *Gal.* 5. 22. The Spirit is in the soul in which Faith (as a fruit) groweth; and this Faith doth receive the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ himself by his Spirit; and it doth also receive Adoption, and Justification: but to be able actually to apply Christ, before we be in Christ



our first birth will not bear it: for a man is as passive in his Regeneration, as in his first Generation; only the Lord giveth us his Spirit that doth unite us unto Christ, which is received by Faith, together with Adoption and Justification; and this is the true and native order of the Lords working.

*Quest. 3.* Whether do we receive the Lord Jesus Christ in an absolute, or in a conditional Promise?

*Ans.* We know the Lord can convey himself in an Evangelical commandment, as well as in a Promise; as we find it, Isa. 41. 14. *Fear thou not worm Jacob, I will help thee, &c.* He can also convey himself in a threatening unto the Devil; as unto our first Parents he did convey himself, wrapping up a promise in it, as Gen. 3. 15. *I will put enmity between thee and the Woman, and between thy seed and her Seed; he shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.* And from hence the Lord gave them to suck a sweet and comfortable promise of his Free Grace: and when the like is conveyed in a Commandment, the Lord undertaketh to work that which he so commandeth: But now it is questioned, Whether the Promise wherein the Lord giveth himself, be absolute or conditional. Faith uniting us to Christ, it is ever upon an absolute Promise; or a condition subsequent, not antecedent. If you will say it is a Promise to a condition; what kind of condition was it? There is no condition before Faith; for when a man is out of the way of any gracious Blessing from Heaven; no condition before it, whereby a man can close with Jesus Christ: and if it was a condition after Faith, unto which the Promise was made, then Faith was there before; and whatsoever followeth conversion, is no ground of Faith, but

but a fruit and effect of it: therefore I say, our coming on to Christ, cannot be upon a conditional but upon an absolute Promise. If the Lord bear witness unto Justification, it is either absolute, or to Faith. If he come to bear witness unto a mans Sanctification, then the Lord doth it from some work or other of his Grace in them; as unto *Abraham, Gen. 22. 12.* *By this I know that thou fearest me, seeing thou hast not withheld thy Son, thine only Son.* It is true indeed, after a mans Justification is borne witness unto from Grace, or from faith, then Sanctification and Justification do mutually bear witness one to another; that is, when Justification is not wholly doubted of, but in part, then Sanctification is of use to witness; but not when Justification lyeth wholly prostrate.

There is a fourth Question, which is as a further branch of the fourth Use; of which I would not speak, but that I might through the good hand of God, the better clear things, that we may not stumble in our expressions, nor in any Office of brotherly love, in conference about the Covenant of Grace and Works.

*Quest. 4.* Forasmuch as you hear of a Sanctification under a Covenant of Works, it doth imply that there is a Sanctification that is but transitory and not everlasting, nor immortal. Whether there may a man evidence his union with Christ from his Sanctification?

*Ans.* I answer in four Propositions, that might not leave any occasion of scruple or difference about what is held forth in our Congregation; being that which doth yield as much agitation as any other Doctrine that is taught among us. Let me therefore shortly and plainly discover it; and let

be so far received, as we see the life, and presence, and truth of the Spirit of God revealed in the Doctrine of Free Grace, from the Scriptures of Truth.

*Propos. 1.* That Sanctification according to the Law, (that is to say, such a Sanctification as may be found in a Covenant of Works) is no evidence, or witness of our union with Christ. And I suppose there is no difference there. But though there be no difference in mens Judgments in this; yet it is an easie thing for Christians to mistake their evidence upon this very ground; and as much upon this ground as any. For when Christians come to be really wrought upon, and find themselves discouraged from sin, and so reform their lives, and give up themselves to obey the Word, and find comfort therein, (and great consolation many times) in such a case as this Christians do much differ upon the point; and yet I do not know any of all the Teachers in this Countrey that withdraw their consents from this Doctrine, that such Sanctification as is wrought in hypocrites, though that it may reach to great improvements, yet it is no evidence of Justification at all. It hath been handled in another Congregation; (and I think not without weight of truth) that to distinguish in men between that Sanctification which floweth from the Law, and that which is of the Gospel, is a matter so narrow, that the Angels in Heaven have much ado to discern who differ; a work fitter for Angels to cut the scantling in it, then for the Ministers of the Gospel, though indeed there be great difference of the one from the other. Now though this do not tend to heal any difference in Judgment; yet it is useful to heal a misprision of Sanctification, that may be found in



all hypocrites. Three things are to be attended unto in all Sanctification;

1. From what Root it springeth.
- As 2. By what Rule it is guided.
3. At what End it aimeth.

And commonly under some one or other of these three, are put all the differences between the one Sanctification and the other: I speak it that it may be searched, and (God is my witness) not to unsettle the well-grounded comfort of any soul: but if any man hath built upon any unsafe Foundation, or hath built hay, or stubble; better it is to know it at first, whilest there is hope in Israel, then when it is too late. In those three things formerly mentioned, are all the differences between the Sanctification of Hypocrites, and of the children of God; and they go so close together, that you will say, it is not an easie matter to discern Justification by Sanctification.

1. For the Root of it; The soul having fellowship with Christ, by the Holy Ghost coming into the soul, and working Faith in Jesus Christ. This is the Root of all Christian Sanctification, Ezek. 36. 27. *I will put my Spirit within you, &c.* And, *that is joynd to the Lord, is one Spirit,* 1 Cor. 6. 17. and for Faith, it is Faith *that purifieth the heart,* Acts 15. 9. and, *without Faith it is impossible to please God,* Heb. 11. 6. So that Faith must concur unto the rootedness of our Sanctification in Christ. But the Apostle doth attribute both these roots unto those Christians that shall afterwards fall away to sin the sin against the Holy Ghost, Heb. 6. *They have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy*

*Holy Ghost*: that Heavenly Gift was Faith, which the Apostle reckoneth chiefly among the Principles of our Christian Religion, ver. 1. A taste they had of it; yet from both these they fall away: you know what was said of *Saul*, 1 Sam. 10, 10. *The Spirit of God came upon him*: And so did it likewise upon *Jedai*, and *Demas*, acting them mightily in their administration; and as they were thus carried along by the Spirit: So likewise the Spirit of Bondage will marvellously prevail with the sons of men, to draw them on to strong works of Reformation, from whence they reap no small consolation; but think and say, (as *Abijah* did) that the Lord is with them, whilst they are with him: And as sometimes *David* said of himself, *I believed, therefore I spoke*: So the *Israelites* also, (*Psal.* 106. 12.) *believed, and sang the praises of God*, upon the Red-sea-shore, and yet were they but an hypocritical Generation. And if hypocrites may work Miracles in the Name of Christ, (as they did, and expostulate with Christ about it, Mat. 7. 22. *Have we not Prophesied in thy Name, and in thy Name cast out Devils, and in thy Name done many wonderful works?*) then may a temporary Faith work ordinary works in Christianity also: and therefore you shall read, Mat. 13. 22. that there is no fault found in the thorny soil for their want of root, or for their want of depth of earth; for the want of both which, the stony soil was taxed: but look as it is with the branches of a Vine, what depth of earth the root hath, they have it, being grafted into the Vine, though they be but *γεγραμμένοι*, branches of the wild Olive, and will bring forth but wild fruit: for though the branch of the wild Olive be grafted into the fat Olive, and may flourish there; yet will it bring forth its own fruit;

fruit; but in the root you will not find a difference; yet there is a difference, but it is very hard to be discerned.

*Obj.* Yes, (will you say) there is a plain difference; for an Hypocrite is ever full of himself; but a true Christian doth all in Faith: he seeketh God daily, and waiteth upon God daily; and these are not the waies of Hypocrites.

*Answ.* Consider I pray you what the Word of the Lord holdeth forth as the Root of this Sanctification, and I will go no further then express Scriptures: Isa. 58. 2. *They seek me daily:* and this is spoken of Hypocritical Israelites: and for waiting, we often hear it spoken of the five foolish Virgins, *they all went out to meet the Bridegroom, Matth. 25. 1.* though whilst he tarried long, they all fell asleep; and so did the Wise Virgins also. And for more particular application of God unto themselves, we find that also, Hos. 13. 2. *Israel shall cry unto me, My God, we know thee;* and yet (in the same Scripture) this Israel had transgressed the Covenant, and cast off the thing that is good: And for a further act of Faith, which is a staying a mans self upon God; what saith the Text? Isa. 48. 2. *They stay themselves upon the God of Israel,* (and yet these are obstinate; their neck as an iron sinew, and their brow as brass) but it was not in truth and uprightness; True, it was not: But how shall we know the difference? Truly it is hard to perceive when men differ, and therefore it is not an easie matter to make such use of Sanctification, as by it to bear witness unto Justification; and it will be a very hard case, yea much more difficult, when men cannot feel the presence of spiritual gifts, but want spiritual light: and when they do find Faith in themselves, they will find it in

Hypo-



Hypocrites also, even *Faith to seek the Lord,* and *Faith to wait upon him,* and *Faith to apply him, saying,* My God; and *Faith to stay upon the God of Israel;* and yet these men do vanish away in hypocrisie. This Hypocrites may do: seeing therefore what easiness of error may befall Christians, whether this or that Grace may be of the right stamp, or no, it will behove Christians to be wary; for even Eagle-eyed Christians will have much ado to discern of Sanctification in themselves, before they see their Justification, as to cut off all Hypocrites from having the like in them. For the sanctified frame of life in Gods children, and that which seemeth to be like it in Hypocrites; both of them spring from the Holy Ghost, and both from Faith; but now the Spirit of God hath this farther work in his own people, beyond what he worketh upon others; though he melteth both, yet Hypocrites are melted as iron, which will return again to his hardness; but his own People are melted into flesh, which will never return to his hardness more; neither can they rest in any measure of softness, unto which they have attained, but still are carried towards Jesus Christ. So that the one is a temporary Faith, and the other Persevereth; though both work in the Name of Jesus Christ, yet this difference will be found between them; not only when Hypocrites come to be blasted, but even in the midst of their profession. As for the Faith of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, it is not president of his own power, but his strength lieth out of himself in Jesus Christ, whereas Hypocrites and legal Christians are confident of their Faith, that they can make use of it unto such and such ends: they think they need no more but look up to Jesus Christ, and their work is at an end.

and

and such strength they find in themselves, that they do not fear but that they shall carry an end all their work in a safe course to Gods glory, and their own: whereas the strongest Faith, even of the *Thessalonians* (whose Faith was such, as that none of all the Churches went before them) if it be not supplied, and strengthened, they know, and the Apostle *Paul* knoweth that it will warp; this may we see by comparing 1 *Thesl.* 1. 3. with chap. 3. 2, 10. and the faithful people of God, *Isa.* 26. 12. acknowledg him to *work all their works for them*: and therefore as there is a real difference in the presence of the Spirit: so also in the work of Faith in Hypocrites, and the children of God; for the one putteth confidence in himself, and the other in *Jehovah*. This is the first difference of Sanctification.

2. There is difference also in the *Rule* whereby they are guided: though both seek to the Word of God, and take delight in that, insomuch as you shall not be able to difference them there, yet a great difference there is in the apprehension of the word: the one is so confident of the strength and comfort that he hath in the word, as he will be ready to take it ill at Gods hand, if he find not assistance from him, and acceptance before him. Now the other see their need they have of the Lord to maintain their strength and comfort for them: this manner of affection we find in *David*, when as the Lord had brought him and his people into a sweet frame and temper of spirit, to offer willingly towards the building of the Temple; what saith *David* now? doth he think this to be enough? No, no, But he prayeth to the Lord, 1 *Chron.* 29. 18. O Lord God of *Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, our Fathers, keep this for ever in the imagination of the thoughts of the hearts*  
of

of thy people, and prepare their hearts unto thee: thus is he sensible, that these comforts and strength would soon fail them, and they should again wax barren and uncomfortable, if the Lord should not still keep them: and here is the nature of true strength and consolation in Christ, to look up unto the Lord to preserve and maintain it; and so he is still drawn nearer and nearer unto Jesus Christ. But now, though both attend unto the Word, as their rule of Sanctification, if you take it in the way in which the one and the other hold it forth, yet there is a great difference. Then shall I not be ashamed, when I shall respect unto all thy Commandments; Psal. 119. 6. Here is a Rule: What may not Hypocrites walk according to this Rule? Truly they profess no less, and they think it is enough, if they have but a rule in their eye; and therefore under a Spirit of Bondage they are confident, and say, *Whatsoever the Lord commandeth us, we will bear it, and do it*, Deut. 5. 27. and what saith Balaam? *Though Balaam would give me an house full of Gold and Silver, I cannot go beyond the Commandment of the Lord*, Numb. 22. 18. and yet he loved the wages of iniquity: and indeed those that undertake so much in their own strength, they come afterward to be weary of the Lord, and weary of his Commandments; as Amos 8. 5. *When will the New Moon be gone, that we may sell Corn? and the Sabbath, that we may sell forib when? &c.* And they say at last, *It is in vain to serve God; and what profit is it that we have kept his Ordinances?* Mal. 3. 14. These are but like washed Swine, that will crop grafs for a while in a fair Pasture; but if you keep them long there, they will not delight in such manner of feeding, but will rather choole to go into the Mire, and into a jakes;



jakes: (that I may so speak with reverence to the assembly) but as for *Gentiles*, they will delight in the Commandments of the Lord. *Isa. 58. 2.* They delight to know his ways, and desire to approach unto God: It is not a very hard thing unto them, nor grievous to keep solemn Fasting dayes together: they come willingly; they delight to come, therefore the difference will hardly be discovered; and unless you be a Christian of a very clear discerning, you will not find the difference.

*Object.* But an Hypocrite will not delight in all Gods Commandments: if you take *Herod*, he will delight in *John Baptists* preaching, and reform many things; but if it come to his not having his brother *Philip* wife, then put *John* into Prison, and in the manner of *Herodias*, off with *Johns* head.

*Answer.* We see what Hypocrites profess, *Deut. 5. 29.* Whatsoever the Lord commandeth us, we will do it, and do it. But you will say, Not always: It is true, a difference in time will grow; but whilst they hold forth universal obedience, how will the difference be discerned? Discerned it will be when the Lord leadeth them forth with workers of iniquity; but many may be led on to their death before they can be discovered; and therefore what will the servant of God say? I have seen hypocrites (to outward view) well rooted, and more comfortable than I my self; and for zeal, and love, the *Galatians* would have plucked out their eyes to have done *Paul* good: they thought themselves blessed in his Ministry, blessed souls they took themselves to be; whereas the dear servants of God are slow to see so much goodness in themselves, they see so much corruption.

*Object.*

*Object.* But you will say, An hypocrite cannot aim at God as his *last end*, but will out-shoot God in his own *good*; and at the highest, he seeketh no more but his own salvation, without respect unto the glory of God in it.

*Ans.* It is true, and in time will appear, that every hypocrite thinketh to out-reach God in all the gifts that he hath received: but in the meanwhile, it is much that an hypocrite will do; and so much, that a poor Christian will be put to much exercise, to find a difference between himself and them: *Jeſu* did not only think that he had *zeal* for the Lord, as he said, *Come ſee my zeal for the Lords House*: but good *Jonadab* likewise did so persuade himself, and therefore did readily joyn with him in his reformation; and when he proclaimed a sacrifice for *Baal*, he thought that *Jeſu* would do no harm to himself in the Temple of *Baal*. Thus therefore sometimes it cometh to pass; because an hypocrite may for a long time find all his own ends attained in seeking the glory of God, as *Jeſu* did: but in conclusion, when a man and his own honour must part; then either he must hold to his own glory, or else he must neglect it, and keep him close to the honour of God: but in the mean time, what can I tell but that I may shake hands with, and bid farewell unto Gods glory, when his and mine lie at stake together?

*Object.* But may not a man perceive a plain difference, when it cometh to *Persecution*?

*Ans.* No, persecution will not clear the difference; for though the stony ground indeed fell off upon point of Persecution, yet the thorny soil did not so. Many Papists have died for their Religion; and how much more then may some hypocrite do it for

for the Truth? yea, even *give his body to be burned*; and yet want Jesus Christ, and everlasting Salvation by him, 1 Cor. 13. 3. Now when a poor Christian cometh, and seeth how much such an one doth magnifie God both in doing and suffering, and yet falleth away; it maketh him conclude, Surely I also shall at length turn away from the Lord. So that whether you look at the *Robe*, or *Rule*, or *Sword*, and bent of holiness, an hypocrite will carry all things in so fair a way, that you shall hardly discover him to his very death; and when a Christian cometh to measure his own Sanctification by this mans Sanctification, he will verily think the one to be as light as the other; and unless it be one that hath his wits well exercised, marvelous much ado he hath to clear himself in such a point as this. There be that think there is no reality in hypocritical sanctification; but certainly it is a real work, the gifts be real, though common Graces; and not meer counterfeit pretences. There are indeed some that do meerly pretend, and do but outwardly make fair weather in their profession; but (believe it) it is not so in all hypocrites, there is a real work in some, *Hib. 6. 4, 5. They are enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gifts, and are made partakers of the Holy Ghost, &c.* these things are real, and not imaginary. God casting in their own ends, and their own glory in their way; the servants of God have given them the right hand of fellowship; and so long they have held out, that it was never known when they did Apostate; yea, and so glorious may this common Sanctification be, that it may dazle the eyes of the best of Gods children, and especially of poor Christians, and almost discourage them, when they see such to fall away. This very point hath been



one principal root of *Arminianism*: as another is, that man receive Christ by their own *Free will*: they are able to prove, that there is not only a pretence of hypocrites, but a real work: and so indeed the Scripture doth call it *Sanctification*, Heb. 12. 29. now hereupon they do believe, that the very best of all the servants of God may depart from, and forsake their justifying Faith: but therein they shew the bleat of a Goat: in so saying they condemn the generation of the Righteous. It is true, that the best of their righteousness may die: for they have no in no more but the way of works. Thus much for the first Proposition.

*Propos. 2. That true Christian Sanctification, (which is a work of Faith) is many times dark to a sincere Christian: it is generally granted to be so, in the first Conversion, and in time of temptation and dejection: as also when a man looketh at the Majesty, and Purity, and Glory of God: Wo is me, for I am unclean (saith the Prophet Esay) at such a time: there is so much power of flesh even in spiritual Christians, specially in young Christians, so much power in their lusts, and in their passions, as will put their best friends to a stand, what to think of them, and much more themselves, when as they come to be pressed with the power of their corruptions, specially when they compare with such hypocrites as run along with more freedome of spirit then themselves: for sometimes their corruptions do less appear, and they are more free from temptations, and not exposed to such sinful courses, as sometimes true-hearted Christians are subject unto: so a poor Christian is discouraged, and an hypocrite is emboldned, seeing himself more sanctified in the outward view then the other.*

*Proposy.* That the true sanctification of a sincere Christian is not discerned by him, nor is indeed discernable, until he first discern his Justifying Faith. A double ground of it, and so leave it to your Christian disquisition, and search; they are both taken from the necessity of Faith, both to the acceptance of a mans person, and of his work: there is a necessity of the activeness of Faith in a mans sanctification. The Lord had respect to Abel, and to his Offering, Gen. 4. 4. A mans person must be first accepted, otherwise all his work will not go beyond the work of a legal Christian, and without Faith it is impossible to please God: no acceptance therefore without Faith. It is also necessary to the performance of all spiritual and holy duties; for all sanctification is from the Faith which Christ doth convey into the soul. Now if the just man live by his Faith, whether it be the life of sanctification, or consolation; then no Christian can discern his Sanctification to be lively, but he must discern his Faith living in it; he must feel his Faith, deriving strength, and grace, and life from Christ, or else he cannot approve his Sanctification to be the Sanctification of the Gospel: For as there can be no true Sanctification, unless there be Faith whereby the person is accepted, and whereby life is received to act in all Sanctification; so there can be no knowledge of Sanctification, but there must be knowledge of Faith, whereby a mans person is accepted, and whereby strength is conveyed to Sanctification: For if a poor soul be doubtful of his acceptance with the Lord, he is where he was, notwithstanding his Sanctification, and wanteth comfort; for this doubt remaineth, whether he be accepted, or no; which until the Lord do manifest mans Faith unto him by the Revelation of the Holy Ghost

Ghost) he is still at a loss in: for though true Sanctification be an evidence of Justification, yet it self must be first evident. Thus we see by this third Proposition, that a further light is required to the sight of Sanctification.

*Propos. 4. Notwithstanding this near resemblance between legal and Evangelical holiness, yet there is a real difference between them: and such a difference as is discernable to Christians, whose wits are exercised in the ways of the Spirit and Word of God; and is discerned by the Revelation or manifestation of the Spirit of God, both of the state and work of good Christians: and that ordinarily also; for I would not count it extraordinary, being that which the Lord by his Spirit doth reveal unto his people. A real difference there is, both in the root, and in the rule, and in the scope which they aim at; and so it will appear to be at the last day, Mat. 2. 23. Depart from me (saith Christ) you workers of iniquity, I never knew you: though they came and told him that they wrought by Faith in him: indeed they stood in some Relation to him, but not as members to the head, only as branches to the Vine, which may be cut off, and yet the Vine not maimed; but if the Members should be cut off, any one from the other, then is the body maimed, and Christ will not suffer his Body to be maimed: but take you never so many branches from the Vine, and it is not maimed, but will bring forth the more fruit: therefore there be no mote fellowship between Christ and a Christian, then between the branches and the Vine, you may take them away, and yet not hurt the Vine. But wherein should this relation stand? It is very hard to conceive, inasmuch that those who have been most exact, and diligent to enquire into it, have professed that it is Angels work;*



very hard it is so to distinguish them from Gods own children, as not to discomfort poor Christians, nor to imbolden hypocrites; we must be tender therefore, that the least of Gods children may not want their bread: Better leave ninety nine sheep, than that one poor stray sheep should not be sought after; and better an hundred hypocrites perish, then that one poor Christian should want his portion; and yet it is not meet that hypocrites should wallow themselves in the fellowship of the Saints, and alwaies bless themselves in their carnal condition. If you shall ask a difference in the Root: both of them are partakers of the Holy Ghost; Hypocrites may have a *taste*, and a poor Christian will fear that his best fellowship with Christ is but a *taste*, and that manifold experience maketh good. Wherein then lieth the difference? doth the Spirit of God leave the heart of an Hypocrite *stony*, and *unmelted*? It is so indeed with the *stony*, but not with the *thorny* soul, for the hearts of some hypocrites are melted as iron stones; they may come to melt about their own estates through fear and sorrow: and so all those melt that want not depth of earth, as the thorny soul did not. But mind you, they will grow hard again, as iron, or lead will do, after it hath been melted. Now look at the Spirit of God when he cometh to work effectually, and he doth not only melt the heart, but *taketh away the heart of stone, and giveth an heart of flesh*; for it is not enough to *break* a stone, it will be a stone though it be broken; but when the Lord changeth it into flesh, then it will be hard no more; but though a man may have many temptations, yet the Lord will keep his heart soft for ever. This is the difference between hypocrites and Gods own servants in the root; though both may work in the

Name

Name of Christ; yet as the one is *temporary*, and the other *persevereth*: so this difference you shall find between common and sincere Christians; and that not only when legal Christians are blasted of God, but even then when they do most flourish in their profession. The true Faith of the Gospel of Jesus Christ is never president of his own strength, but goeth out of himself, and is dependent on Jesus Christ: whereas the legal Christian is confident in his Faith, that he can make use of it to these and these ends which are before him. He thinketh there is no more needful, but to look up unto Christ, and so his work is done: whereas take you the strongest Faith of the *Thessalonians*, who were grown to such height, that none of the Churches were before them; yet the Apostle doth not think their Faith strong enough, but prayeth for the supplying of something that is lacking in their Faith: otherwise, when it is at the best, it will wark; whereas one that hath but a temporary Faith, he is confident in the strength of that Faith, insomuch that he doth not fear but to carry an end his profession in a safe course to Gods glory, and his own: thus we see there is a real difference between the presence and work of the Spirit in an hypocrite, and in a child of God: in particular, we see there is a difference in the Faith which is given unto both of them; the one hath confidence in himself, the other in *Jehovah*, Isa. 26. 12, 13. This is the first Difference in the Root of their Profession.

2. There is difference also in the *Rule* by which they walk; though both seek to the Word, and delight in that, you shall not difference them there; yet this difference you shall find in their apprehensions; the one is confident of his comfort that

he hath in the Word, the other seeth need that the  
 Lord should maintain his comfort for him, 1 Chro.  
 29. 18. *David prayeth thus, O Lord God of Abraham,  
 Isaac, and Israel, our Fathers; keep this for ever in the  
 thoughts of the hearts of thy People, and prepare their  
 hearts unto thee.* As being sensible that this their  
 comfortable frame of Spirit would soon fail them,  
 and they would quickly grow little unto such spi-  
 ritual work, as then they had been about: and this  
 is the nature of true consolation in Jesus Christ, it  
 maketh a man to have recourse unto the Author of  
 it, to preserve it. Now though both attend unto  
 the Word, yet here they differ: The one hath  
 enough if he can see the Rule, like to the Israelites,  
 Deut. 5: 27. *All that the Lord our God shall speak unto  
 thee, we will hear it, and do it:* they have enough if  
 they have the Rule: but a Christian attending right-  
 ly unto his Rule, findeth it far off from him to walk  
 according to it; unless the Lord be pleased so to set  
 it home unto him, as that by his power he may be  
 carried an end in obedience unto it: for though he  
 know, and see his Rule, yet he wanteth some body  
 to rule his heart, according to his Rule; otherwise,  
 though the Rule be straight, his walking will be crook-  
 ed, as a child will write crookedly, though his line  
 be straight: So a Christian man is sensible how his  
 feet and hands will shake, when he cometh to walk,  
 or do any thing by a rule; therefore he doth wholly  
 look unto Christ, as being sensible of his own inabili-  
 ty, unless he find help and strength from him.  
 3. There is difference between Hypocrites and  
 Gods people in the scope and end which they aim at:  
 though both aim at the glory of God, yet both can-  
 not attain to this, to make the glory of God their  
 last end: but the one of these do secretly wind about



to their own glory in the end, as *Telus* doth, 2 Kings 19. 16. *Come, see my zeal that I have for the Lord:* but he bringeth about his own glory by it, and here is the main deceit of the work: he seeketh the glory of God in himself, and in his own hand; whereas the principal care of Gods own people is, and ought to be, the glory of God in Jesus Christ: but the other, his chief care is to have it seen that God is glorified by his hand; *Come, see the zeal that I have.*

**Object.** You will say, Is it not a great glory unto God to be glorified by my hand?

**Answer.** Yes brother; but there is a great deceit in it: for many a man will work much, so far as his own glory is wrapped up in his actions, and like it well so long as God may be glorified in him; but all this while he wanteth those single affections after the glory of God for Gods sake. But how then should a man seek to promote the glory of God? If it be the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ, which a man seeketh after, he will then rejoyce as much that God may be glorified by his brother, as by himself; and that is the spirit of a true *Israelite* indeed: so that the name of Christ may be magnified, its no matter by whom; *I therein rejoyce, yea, and will rejoyce,* saith the blessed Apostle, *Phil. 1. 18.* If any man therefore aimeth at Gods glory then only, when it may be an honour to his profession, no thank to you brother for that; much close work may be found, so long as both are carried an end together: but if when I hear that my brother glorifieth God, I could have wished that such a thing had been done or spoken by me; and it is the worse because it is not done by my hand: if that, which is the rich goodness of God to my brother, be not my rejoy.

rejoycing; it is because of the Core of hypocrisie in my heart. Thus have we seen particularly the difference between Legal and Evangelical holiness.

We proceed still in this fourth life, to a fifth Question.

If Jesus Christ be the first Gift that is given to the children of God, Before he giveth right unto Promises; or to me to challenge Promises, yea, before he giveth me any other gifts of his saving Grace; then any soul may ask this Question,

*Quest.* Of what use are Promises, if they be not to bring me to Christ? yea specially, to what end are conditional Promises made (that is to say, Promises to such and such Qualifications) if I may not take a Promise in the one hand, and a Qualification in the other hand, and bring them both to God, and lay hold upon Christ with both hands, in the strength of this Promise made to this Qualification? Thus ariseth the Question, If God give Jesus Christ first, Before any other blessing; as we read before, To Abraham and to his Seed were the Promises made, (he meaneth unto Christ) and all the Promises are in him Yea, and in him, Amen: no having of Promises therefore before Christ; to what purpose are they given then, if not to bring me unto Christ? It is a point needfull to be known, because we read Promises in Scripture daily: and certainly great use is to be made of them; and if we shall make no other use of them, but to bring us unto Christ; and God hath not sanctified them unto that end; then we shall take them all in vain, and the Name of God that is called upon them.

*Ans.* There is a threefold use of Promises in Scripture; to wit, 1. Before Union with Christ:

2. In

1. *Union with Christ.* 2. *After Union with Christ.* 3. *Before union with Christ, there is a three-fold use of Promises.* They are of use for Doctrine, to teach all the people of God what great and glorious things are hid up in Jesus Christ, even the unsearchable riches of Christ, Eph. 3. 8. and this all the Promises of God do hold forth: if the Lord promise to be your Father, your Husband, your Shepherd, your Head, your Root; if he promise to be any other blessing in the world to you; whatever Promise you read or hear, the Lord sheweth you by it, the unsearchable Riches of Jesus Christ; and that is no vain use of Promises, for a man to know by them the great good things that are treasured up in Jesus Christ by the Father: therefore they are called *Great and precious Promises*, 2 Pet. 1. 4. Why so? because they declare the great and precious Priviledges and Blessings in Jesus Christ: therefore it is that the Lord will have all his people to look at him in his Word and Promises, and to know what great good he hath in store for all them that trust in him, and seek after him in Jesus Christ. Thus all the Promises of Grace declare his excellency, as Cant. 5. 10. *My Beloved is white and ruddy, the chiefest among ten thousand:* So do all the Promises declare him to be a plentiful Saviour, and a Mighty Redeemer of all his people. 2. As they are of use for Doctrine, so for instruction: It is good for the honour of God, to know them; but instruction is a further thing, and distinct from Doctrine, 2 Tim. 3. 16. by instruction men are taught not only what to know, but what to do; to know, and see whither they should resort for the enjoy-



enjoyment of all those precious blessings that God hath laid up in Jesus Christ; and this is a precious use of the Promises, that by them the soul should be thus instructed whither to go for life and salvation. Such instruction we find, Isa. 43. 22. *Look unto me, and be ye saved, all ye ends of the earth:* here is a direction to me before I look, whither to look; I do not only see great things, and so vanish away, but I am directed to look, and be saved: thus are we taught of God likewise by his blessed Apostle, Acts 2. 38. *Repent, and be Baptized into the Name of Jesus Christ, for the Remission of sins: for the Promise is unto you, and to your children, and to as many as the Lord our God shall call.* Thus are we taught by the Promises, whither to look for life and salvation.

3d The Promises serve likewise for Exhortation: as the Scripture is alleged holdeth forth: for some many blessings as you see propounded in the Promises, so many Exhortations are there to perswade, and provoke mens souls to come unto Jesus Christ: as did Jacob sometimes provoke his Sons, saying, *Why stand ye gazing one upon another? behold, I have been absent from the Lord in Egypt, etc.* Gen. 43. 1, 2. So with the Lord to the Sons of men in his Promises; Why stand ye gazing in the want of this and that blessing? is there not pardon of sin, and all manner of blessings in Jesus Christ: thus is the Soul exhorted motionably to look for mercy, but not to rest till he may enjoy it. Though it be not the Promises themselves, yet their own power (without the Spirit) carry men on: yet this is the end to which God signeth them, to stir up the Sons of men, not to rest in beholding the good things in the Promises, but to exhort them to provoke themselves and one another to look after the Lord: thus did the Apostle Paul exhort

Exhort the Jews, and testified to them of the Free  
Grace of God in his Promises, *Act. 2. 40.* and in-  
deed, the promises in themselves are strong grounds  
of Exhortation, to stir up the spirits of all Gods peo-  
ple to look to Jesus Christ, and to come unto him,  
in whom such abundance of rich Grace is laid up.  
Thus do the Promises of God furnish both Ministers  
and People, with Doctrine, with Instruction, and  
with Exhortation in their kind.

Now there is a threefold effect that they have in  
some of all sorts, good and bad, that live in the bo-  
some of the Church.

1. They have a power of *Illumination*: they will  
enlighten the minds even of Hypocrites, and then  
that are endued with no more but common gifts, as  
well as the people of God: of such the Apostle  
speaketh, *Heb. 6. 4. Who were once enlightened, &c.*  
*and had tasted of the good Word of God.*

2. When not only enlightning, but a second thing  
is expressed, An Hypocrite may have a taste of Je-  
sus Christ in the Promises, and be so affected with  
him, that he doth despise all other things in compa-  
rison of him, so as that he cometh to resolve for his  
part never to forego him; and hath so much con-  
fidence in God, that he saith with *Human*, Whom  
will the King delight to honour more then my self?  
and this illumination, he taketh to be a strong and  
effectual conversion unto the Lord.

3. The Promises have a work of *Conviction* upon  
the Soul: if any man refuse, and despise them, they  
leave him unexcusable, *Prov. 1. 24, 25, 26. &c.* Be-  
cause I have called, and ye have refused: I have stretch-  
ed out my hand, and no man regarded: but you have  
set at nought all my Counsels, and would none of my  
reproof: I will laugh at your Calamity, &c. this is  
their

their blood justly upon their own head, that reſiſt and deſpiſe his Promiſes, and they aggravate the condemnation another day: and to this end the Apoſtle maketh uſe of a precious Promiſe of God *Acts 13. 38, 39, 40, 41.* Be it known unto you men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of ſins: and by him all that believe are juſtified from all things, from which you could not be juſtified by the Law of Moſes: beware therefore, leſt that come upon you which is ſpoken of by the Prophets: Behold ye deſpiſers, wonder, and periſh, &c. A ſtrange Application of ſuch a gracious Promiſe; a ſign there is power in the Promiſes even unto this end. Thus we ſee there is a marvellous gracious uſe of Promiſes before Union with Chriſt, as to help Miniſters and people with matter of Doctrine, and Inſtruction and Exhortation; ſo alſo to awaken men unto Illumination, and Affection, and Conviction, and to ſeal them up unto everlaſting deſtruction, if they turn their backs upon them.

*Gen. 2.* As the Promiſes are of uſe before our Union with Chriſt, ſo our Union with him the ſame is of great uſe; for when the Lord giveth himſelf to the Soul, he doth it in a Promiſe. He cometh unto the Soul riding (as it were) upon the Chariot of a Promiſe, and begetteth faith in the Soul by the Promiſe, or ſome ſuch word of Grace as is equipollent to a promiſe, *Ezek. 37. 11.* whereby we receive Jeſus Chriſt, though before him we can have no Promiſe; yet in a Promiſe we do receive him. This is the very firſt ſtroke of cloſing with Jeſus Chriſt; he giveth himſelf, and we take him as he offereth himſelf, even in a Promiſe: ſuch a like Diſpenſation of himſelf we read of, *Acts 3. 25, 26.* Ye are the children of the Prophets, and of the Covenant which God made with our Fathers.



ters, saying unto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the Nations of the earth be blessed: unto you first, God having raised up his Son Jesus, sent him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities: Here Christ offered in a Promise of Free Grace, without any previous, gracious qualification mentioned. Howbeit, many of them that heard the Word, believed, and the number of the men was about 5000; about 3000 of them believed before: so that here are 2000 that believe upon this gracious Promise: the Lord Christ is offered to them, and they receive him by Faith. Thus we see that Promises are not vain things, but there are great use of them; before our Union, all Promises are of excellent use, as also in our Union.

3. After our Union with Christ, they are of abundant use: They were of use before we were in Christ, for Doctrine, and for Instruction, and for Exhortation; but now they are of more efficacy in the same kind, and

1. They serve for Doctrine, to teach us, that there is not only free grace in Christ, but there are gifts of grace in Jesus Christ, and all the treasures of the good things of God are in him, and all the Blessings of the Promises made unto qualifications are laid up in him also.

2. They serve for Instruction, to direct us whether to look for qualifications, and the blessings promised unto them; namely, to the Lord Jesus Christ, to receive the blessing through him, and the qualification by the same hand: for they are first fulfilled in him; there is no good Condition, but it is found in Jesus Christ, no blessing belonging thereunto, but it is found in Christ also; in him therefore they are to be sought for: so that though a poor Soul

Soul see himself wretched, and blind, and naked, yet he hath an Husband in whom all riches is laid up: this he is taught to know by the Promise, and directed also to go to Jesus Christ, that enjoying him, he may enjoy all good things in him.

3. They are of use to stir up unto Prayer: for now I see, that all these good things are in Christ; and in him they must be enjoyed, if they be enjoyed at all: hereupon the Soul is set a work (the Holy Ghost concurring therewith) to consider, Is there so much Grace in Christ, and in him abundantly? hath the Lord made so many gracious Promises unto such and such gracious qualifications? Whither then should I go either for the one, or for the other, but unto Christ, that he may work in us a Spirit of Faith, of love, and of a sound mind; and what else soever we stand in need of?

4. They are of use to help us to know our spiritual state, and means to discern thereof: All these qualifications to which the Promises are made, are fruits of the Spirit, and will more or less declare unto you your sanctified state, which is a marvellous blessing. Upon the Promises made unto such conditions, the Lord stirreth up the hearts of his people to seek for such conditions, to which the Promises are made; and when the Lord hath given us them, he then openeth our hearts to see what he hath given us, and so to discern our sanctified estate: Now I know that thou searest God, saying, thou hast not withheld thy Son, thine only Son from me: so the Lord said to Abraham, Gen. 22. 12. wherein he bare witness to his works; and this doth fill Abraham with strong consolation, together with the Oath of God unto him: for now the Lord doth not only know it, but causeth him to know it also: so that if the Lord do but breathe

breath in such a fruit of the Spirit, if he doth but give power to the Soul to do such a work unto which the Promise is made, and to make it appear unto the Soul to be indeed such, by the revelation of his own blessed Spirit, then doth the Lord fill the Soul with consolation. *Psal. 9. 18. The patient expectation of the meek shall not perish for ever:* When the poor soul is necked by Gods hand, and the Lord letteth him so discern it, that now he quietly resteth upon the Lord, now the Spirit of God doth help David along to be supported with some stay: and besides, the waiting of a Christian upon him who hath made the Promises, doth make him yet more patient and hopeful: and this is a fourth Use of *Conditional Promises.*

5. They are of use to work all these qualifications in us, to which the Blessings are promised: *By the exceeding precious Promises we are made partakers of the Divine nature, 2 Pet. 1. 4.* and this is no small work, or use of these Promises, that from them should spring all our gracious qualifications; for the Lord having promised such blessings in them, these Promises being received and enjoyed, and meditated on by us, we beholding them, and the glory of the Lord Jesus in them, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord, *2 Cor. 3. 18.* this great power there is in the Promises to help an end the work of God in the soul of a Christian: So that, though they were never given to bring us to Christ, yet to this end they were given, to work all those qualifications in us to which the blessings are promised.

6. They are of use to provoke and stir up Christians to all such duties to which blessings are promised: they stir them up effectually. The Lord maketh



hath a Promise, 2 Cor. 6. 17, 18. that such as touch no unclean thing, we will receive them, and be a father to them, and they shall be his sons. And mark what the Apostle maketh of this conditional promise, 1 Cor. 9. 1. Having therefore these promises (dearly beloved) let us cleanse our selves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God. Implying, that the having of these promises stirreth up Gods people unto duties, and the Lord is wont to breathe in them, and so to set forward the work of cleansing in the hearts and wayes of his servants.

7. They are of use further, to strengthen faith; for the Lord that hath made such promises will accomplish them for his servants, Gen. 32. 9, 10. Jacob there putteth the Lord in mind of his Promise, and saith, O God of my Father Abraham, and God of my Father Isaac, and the Lord, which said unto me, Return into thy Countrey, and to thy kindred, and I will deal well with thee: and he was now returned according to the appointment of God; but what now doth he plead the condition? mind in the next words: I am not worthy of the least of all the mercies, and of all the truth which thou hast shewed unto thy servant: Yet now, though he pleadeth not any worth at all, yet seeing the Lord hath promised such a mercy to him, he prayeth for it, ver. 11. Deliver me, I pray thee from the hand of my Brother: thus his faith is strengthened; though he doth not plead his worthiness to receive mercy. So also do absolute Promises strengthen faith, and the Prayer of Faith, 2 Sam. 7. 13, 14. &c. the Lord there promiseth David that he would build him an house, and that he would not take his mercy from his Children; this stirreth up, and strengtheneth the Faith of David.

er. 18, 29. Now, O Lord, thou art that God, and thy words be true, and thou hast promised this goodness unto thy servant; therefore now let it please thee to bless the house of thy servant, &c. this well ordered and sure Covenant of God was all his stay, and all his salvation, though his house was not so with God, 2 Sam. 23. 5. So when the Lord promiseth to heal the backslidings of his people, Hof. 14. 4. their hearts are strengthened to come unto the Lord, and to say, O Lord, thy words are true, let it please thee to heal the backslidings of thy servants. Thus by the Promises of God, the Faith and faithful prayers of Gods servants are both of them strengthened together.

Now let me further say thus much, Let us rightly discern what use to make of the principal part of the Scriptures; take heed you do not close with Promises before you have *Jesus Christ*, specially take heed you make not use of Promises to a qualification to give you your part in *Jesus Christ*, neither be taken aside to make account that the Lord did give you himself graciously in a conditional Promise; for these are aberrations from the Covenant of Grace: Consider therefore well what the Promises are, and what use the Lord would have us to make of them: It is not for a woman to take her husbands inheritance before she take his person; and you know that all the blessings, and all the Promises are (as it were) the Inheritance of the Lord *Jesus*, given unto him and to no other, but in his Name; and therefore there is not any soul under Heaven that can challenge his right in *Christ* at the first by any promise, till *Christ* first be given: if you know that you are in *Christ*, you may then know that the Promises are yours, otherwise you shall not be able to show your right in *Christ* by your right in the Promises;

mises; and therefore do not turn them upside down  
 beyond the scope and intendment of the Covenant  
 of Grace: we may take occasion by them to ad-  
 mire the goodness and grace of God, as David did  
*Psal. 21. 19. O how great is thy goodness, which thou*  
*hast laid up for them that fear thee!* thus ought  
 we to consider of them, and whither to look that we  
 might enjoy them, and the blessings in them: If you  
 shall say, We have been converted, and we have had  
 gracious changes wrought within us; be not de-  
 ceived: such work may reach no farther then con-  
 viction, and you may come at the last to turn your  
 backs upon Jesus Christ. Consider therefore, dis-  
 ever the Lord give *himself* to be one with you? when-  
 soever the Lord doth strike up the bond of Un-  
 ion, it is in an *absolute*, and *free promise* of his Grace.  
 Trust not theretore unto every leaning of your soul  
 upon conditional Promises; for so you may build  
 upon a *Covenant* made upon a *work*, and in the end  
 you and your Covenant will fail together: but  
 when you read how the Lord hath made such Pro-  
 mises to such and such qualifications, then consider  
 that those things are indeed requisite to be found in  
 you; but who is there in heaven, or earth, that is  
 able to work them in you? there is none but Jesus  
 Christ; and unless you have him to be in you, you  
 cannot have any of these things wrought in you.  
 But, will a poor Soul say, I am not able to reach to  
 the Lord *Jesus Christ*, therefore all the Promises of the  
 Gospel do fall heavy upon a man, and he seeth that  
 they are too burdensome and weighty for him; he  
 doth not say, Here is the qualification, and here  
 is the blessing promised to it, and therefore I will take  
 it to my self, but one that is taught of God, doth  
 forthwith go, and pray unto God, that he will  
 him



him in the way of those blessings, and that so he will make him partaker of them; he prayeth that God will give him his Son, and that he will adorn him with his grace, as a Bride of Jesus Christ. Thus while the soul looketh towards Jesus Christ, and Grate in him, the Lord doth secretly transform him into the image of Christ, by working such qualifications in him, and then beareth witness to that sanctification which is wrought in his heart, thereby enlarging his soul with strong consolation in Jesus Christ: and in the same way it is that the Lord doth strengthen the faith of his people to believe that all those things which God hath promised are accomplished in Jesus Christ, and the Law fulfilled in me so far as Christ is in me; and therefore I come unto God in prayer, to make good those Promises unto me in a right way, which would have been preposterously applied before Christ was given. And this may serve for answer unto this fifth question.

*Quest. 6.* We come now unto a sixth question. If the Lord do give himself first in the Covenant of his grace, this may then be a doubt, and a question in a Christian soul; If God gives himself before any blessing, before any Promise in order of nature (though he giveth himself alwaies in a Promise) or a word that is equivalent to a Promise, as *Cant. 5. 16. chap. 6. 1.* if we cannot claim any blessing from God at the first in any conditional promise, therefore not by any condition in our selves, but as we received all things from God, so we claim all things from God in Jesus Christ, and so do first seek for him, and for all things in him: If thus, *to what* *do we then serveth the Law of God, which requireth such* *and such conditions in us? do we not abrogate the Law,* *and make it of none effect, and root it out from having*

any power over Christians? And truly, some under  
presence of the Covenant of Grace, have thought  
altogether bootless to bind Christians unto the Law  
of God, and to look at it as any part of the directi-  
on of their course: because this is an imputation  
usually reflected upon the Covenant of Grace, let  
consider therefore, and enquire to what use serveth the  
Law of God, if God give himself first unto his people  
the Covenant of his Grace?

*Answer.* Though the Lord giveth himself freely  
thelself, and his Son, and all the blessings of the Co-  
venant of Grace, without respect unto any work  
the Law, yet the Law is of special and notable use  
unto all the sons of men, both unto them which  
not yet brought home unto God by converting  
Grace, and also to those that are Regenerate in Je-  
Christ. The Apostle Paul did observe that the ques-  
tion would arise upon the Doctrine of the Co-  
nant of Grace, Gal. 3. 16, 17, 18. For if the blessing  
Abrahams cometh upon the People of God by Jesus Christ  
to what end then serveth the Law, which came 430  
ter? it cannot disavow to make the Promise of God  
name effect: to what end then serveth it? some say  
is of no use; others say that it is of such use, that they  
had rather renounce the Covenant of Grace then it  
but the answer is, It is of especial use both unto spi-  
ritual, and carnal men.

First, unto carnal men, and they are of two sorts  
some belong unto the Election of Grace, though they  
be not yet called; others are not written in the  
Lambes Book of Life, but will in the end time  
perish: and yet the Law is of use unto both sorts  
them.

For those that are the Elect of God, it is of use  
unto them, to aggravate their sin, and to multiply

unto them as it were: that is to say, to aggravate the apprehension of the hainousness of sin upon their Consciences, and to set home the burden of their sins unto their souls, thereby to drive them to feel their great need of the Lord Jesus Christ, whom otherwise they should for ever have despised. Thus the Apostle answereth in the place fore-named, *The Law was added because of transgressions*: that they might clearly appear, and be aggravated thereby; that a man might plainly discern how he hath made himself liable unto the wrath of God, by so manifold breaches of so many Commandments in one kind or other; the Law giveth clear knowledge of sin, and so much the more doth it set on the weight of it upon the Conscience, working fear in the heart, *Rom. 8. 15.* and hence it is that the Apostle telleth *Gal. 3. 24.* that *the Law was our School-master to Christ*: as a School-master driveth his Scholar through fear, unto this or that duty: so the Law of God driveth the soul through fear unto *Jesus Christ*: not that it doth reveal *Christ* a Saviour and Redeemer of Free Grace, but the soul being once brought down under the sense of sin by the terrors of the Law, will readily and diligently hearken unto the news of *Christ* a Saviour: for being once made sensible of his own inability to redeem himself, and unworthiness to be redeemed from the wrath of God, now is the Soul fitted to hear the voice of the Gospel, now is the news of *Jesus Christ* beautiful, and glad tidings: and of this use is the Law unto the Elect of God, before they come under the Covenant of the Grace of God.

2. But of what use is the Law unto other men? *Answer.* First, In regard of *disobedience* it is of use unto them, and 2. the *obedience* to it is of use,



1. In regard of *disobedience*: for if men had not known sin, it had been some pretence, though they had committed sin; but when men have the knowledge of the *Law*, and yet commit sin willingly, now they have no Cloak for their sin, *Rom. 1. ver. 20* compared with 22. where the Apostle speaketh of the great sin of the Gentiles, and much more of the Jews, who *though they knew God, and the judgments of God, and that they which commit such wickedness are worthy of death, yet not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.* When a man shall not only do such wickedness, but bless himself in it, this aggravateth a mans condemnation: if men will not come unto *Jesus Christ* that they might have life, *John 5. 40.* what saith our Saviour in this case? *verse 34. Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father, there is one that accuseth you, even Moses in whom you trust: Moses will judge all those that please themselves in wickedness, and will not turn to the Lord Jesus Christ:* thus there is use of the *Law* unto disobedient persons, their disobedience will leave them without excuse when they sin against their Consciences, and against the means which the Lord hath administered unto them: for though the Lord never gave them such grace as do accompany Salvation, yet such *Illumination* he did give them, that they needed not to have broken the *Law* so many wayes, with such wicked hands as they have done: therefore when they have been enlarged to perform many duties, and might have avoided much sin, and yet will sin against their Consciences, and tread underfoot thole means of grace that were committed unto them; It is then most righteous with God that they should be condemned.

2. Of what use is the *obedience* of the Law unto such whom Gods soul taketh no pleasure in? Truly, it is of sad and dreadful use unto them; for it serveth to harden them in their sins, (though that be but an accidental use thereof) their sins are thereby made out of measure sinful, *Rom. 7. 13.* They harden their hearts, 1. by their *obedience* to the Law. 2. By the *Comfort* which they take in that *obedience*; both these do marvellously harden their hearts. For the first of these, The Apostle Paul, *Acts 23. 1.* had kept so good a Conscience, that he knew not any sin against the Law that he lived in; but though he was unrebukable, he did count it all loss afterward, *Phil. 3. 7, 8.* those things that before he thought had been his gain, now he *counted them but dung that he may win Christ*: when a man attaineth to outward conformity unto the Law, he is then ready to think it is indeed good for poor sinful men to look for Salvation by *Jesus Christ*; but for himself, he hopeth in his devotion, and that he is able to save himself: these are such as *justify themselves before men*, to whom our Saviour speaketh, *Luke 16. 15.* and of whom he saith, *That publicans and Harlots shall go into the Kingdome of heaven before them*, *Matth. 21. 31, 32.* for many times you shall have the most debaucht and profane wretches more humbled, and readier to hearken to the voice of Christ, and sooner convinced of the necessity of the Covenant of Grace, then those that are but morally righteous by the Law, *Rom. 30, 31, 32.* the Gentiles which followed not after righteousness have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of Faith: but Israel which followed after the Law of Righteousnesse, hath not attained to the Law of Righteousnesse; wherefore?

because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the Law: and chap. 10. 31. They being ignorant of Gods righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. Thus the Law becometh a snare unto them; and that which is of singular and wholesome use unto the Children of God, is made death unto them. And as their obedience to the Law is thus a snare unto them: so secondly, the delight and comfort which they take in their obedience is a greater snare then the other: the stony and thorny soil did hear the Word with joy, and so those Hypocrites, Isa. 59. 2. did delight to approach unto God: but what followed upon the delight which they took in God, and in holy Duties? it made them ready to expostulate with God, why he did not answer them according to their works: the delight which they found, did so fill their hearts with assurance of the Grace of God, that they looked at their Duties as so many tokens of the love of God unto their souls; and then when men come to find more comfort in their obedience, then in the grace of God in Jesus Christ, it maketh them ready to expostulate with God, touching the worth of their own righteousness, Isa. 57. 10. Thou hast found the life of thine hand, therefore thou wast not grieved; as long as a man findeth life and comfort in his own duties and performances, what need can he see to be grieved for the want of Jesus Christ? or at the best, if he do grieve, and find his heart comforted in grieving and delighting in the course of Humiliation, he then thinketh he hath no need of being farther solicitous about his spiritual estate. Thus we see plainly, that the Law of God is of marvellous use in the dayes of the Gospel, of great use unto those that belong unto God,



God, to break their hearts for sin, and to drive them to *Jesus Christ*; and for others, the *disobedience* of the *Law*, leaves them without excuse, that so disobey it; again, the obedience of it, and comfort in that obedience, doth harden the hearts of others from *Jesus Christ*.

2. But what say you then unto men that are under a Covenant of Grace, and brought unto fellowship with Christ therein? of what use is the *Law* of God unto such? is it utterly antiquated, or is there any more to be done with it?

*Answer.* The Apostle answereth this Question, when he saith, *I am not without the Law to God, but under the Law to Christ*, 1 Cor. 9. 21. so (mind you) the *Law* is of use unto the Apostle Paul, but how? as the *Law* cometh under Christ, so Paul cometh under the *Law*; this is the sum of the Answer, but that would be further explained. What meaneth he when he saith, *I am under the Law to Christ*? In some sense a Christian is wholly freed from the *Law*. In some sense he is yet under the *Law*. So far as the *Law* is any way besides, or out of Christ, so far the Apostle is without the *Law*: So far as the *Law* is under Christ, so far he is under the *Law*. Keep close to these two Principles, and you shall safely avoid Rocks on every hand: thus by the use of the *Law* shall you not go aside to a Covenant of Works, nor by attendance unto Grace, shall you need to neglect the *Law*. How far is the *Law* under Christ? when it hath brought the soul nearer unto Christ, and in a remote manner prepared him, the *Law* is in Christ, and you subject to it in him. 1. As the *Law* is given by Christ. 2. As in Christ help is given to perform it. First, as the *Law* is given by Christ, as 1 Thes. 4. 2, 3. You know what Commandments

ments we gave you by the Lord Jesus: for this is the will of God, even your Sanctification, &c. and many other Commandments he gave them, all which are legal Commandments, and yet the Apostle gave them by the Lord Jesus: so Mat. 5. 17. to the end of the Chapter: our Saviour Christ would not have us think that he came to destroy the Law or the Prophets, but to fulfill them. And to that end he doth there expound the spiritual and true meaning of the Law, that whereas the Pharisees held forth the outward letter of the Law to be observed only, as thinking that unless a man did commit the Act of Murder, he was not guilty of the breach of the sixth Commandment; and if he committed not the Act of Adultery, he transgressed not the seventh Commandment, and so of the rest: Our Saviour Christ expoundeth the Law more spiritually, shewing that anger against a mans brother is the breach of the sixth Commandment; and whosoever shall look on a Woman to lust after her, hath committed Adultery with her in his heart, and broken the seventh Commandment; thus Christ hath as it were revived Moses: but as the Law is given by Christ, it is not a Covenant of Works, but a Commandment of well-doing; and he having given it, we take our selves bound to be subject to it. The Apostle also presseth the Moral Law upon several relations of men, Ephes. 6. 1, 2, 3, &c. It is an honour to Jesus Christ, that his servants should be holy, as he is holy; it is for the glory of God, and he requireth it: The Apostle James presseth it, chap. 2. 8. to the end of the Chapter. *If you fulfill the Royal Law according to the Scripture, (Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thy self) ye do well.* And again, *Whosoever shall keep the whole Law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all.* Thus

Thus we see the Apostles of *Jesus Christ* put it upon Christians to keep the *Law* of God, and *Christ* himself beareth witness to the *Law*: for God will never justify sin to be no sin, though he will justify the person of a sinner.

Now as the Lord *Jesus* giveth the *Law*, and as it were reneweth it, so he doth also give his *Spirit* unto his servants, enabling them to keep it, *Jer.* 31. 33. *Ezek.* 36. 27. *I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my Statutes, and ye shall keep my Judgments, and do them.* And again, *I will put my Law in their hearts, and write it in their inward parts.* Now this *Law* would he not write in the hearts of his people, nor give unto them his holy *Spirit* enabling them to keep his *Law*, were it not his will in *Jesus Christ*, that the *Law* should be the rule of holiness and righteousness unto his people: hence it is, that the children of God, though they be not under the *Covenant* of the *Law*, yet take themselves to be bound to the obedience of it; for if *Jesus Christ* have given the *Law*, as well as *Moses*, and if he have ratified it by giving them his *Spirit*, to teach and strengthen them to keep it, though not perfectly, yet sincerely, then they take themselves bound to obey the *Law*, though they be under the *Covenant* of *Grace*; for do we make void the *Law* through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the *Law*. For what need have Christians of free Justification by *Christ*, if they were not bound to obedience by the Commandment of the *Law*? Therefore the free Justification of men under a free *Covenant* of *Grace*, doth establish the obedience of the *Law*, otherwise what need they run to *Christ* to save them from the curse of the *Law*? Why do we still run to *Christ* for the continuance of



of our justification? But that we find our selves ungodly creatures against the righteous and holy Law of God: therefore if God have given men the Law, and his holy Spirit to strengthen them in the obedience of it, and his grace to save them from the curse of it; then Christians are to know that they are bound to keep the Law; they lie under the authority of it, and dare not pluck their necks from under that yoke.

Now, there are two *Effects* springing from the subjection of Gods people to the Commandment of the Law.

1. As they take themselves bound to the obedience of it; so they believe, and many times feel the *fiery displeasure* of God, when they transgress the Law: now the transgression of the Law could not bring them under Gods displeasure, unless they were bound unto the Commandment of the Law: this displeasure David was sensible of, *Psal. 38. 1, 2, 3, &c.* *There is no soundness in my flesh because of thine anger, neither is there any rest in my bones because of my sin.* And many complaints of like nature doth he there make, which do all of them spring from the conscience of the disobedience of the Law, which God hath framed in the hearts of his servants, whereby they reflect upon their sin as the ground of all the distempers which lie upon their bodies or minds. This is the first effect of the subjection of Gods people to his Law: they lie under the faith and sence of the danger of the disobedience of it.

2. They are under the faith and sence also of Gods gracious acceptance of their waies, when they are suitable to the blessed directions of his Word: not that they can raise themselves from the assurance of their

their justified estate, but by the same Spirit of God, whereby they are helped to obey the Commandment, they do see the Lords gracious approbation of them in their poor and weak endeavors: *for the Lord knoweth the way of the righteous*; that is, acknowledgeth, and approveth it, *Psal. 1. 6.* when the Lord by his Spirit boweth the hearts of his servants to obedience, then he knoweth and accepteth their obedience; *Gen. 22. 12.* Now I know that thou fearest me, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me: thus the Lord beareth witness to his servants that he doth accept their works; so that they sensibly know, and believe that the Lord doth acknowledge their poorest and weakest endeavours, unto which they are carried forth by his Spirit in the obedience of his word: This the Prophet David confirmeth, *Psal 18. 20, to 26.* The Lord rewarded me according to my righteousness, according to the cleanness of my hands hath he recompensed me; for I kept the wayes of the Lord, and have not wickedly departed from my God: for all his judgments were before me, and I did not put away his statutes from me; I was also upright before him, and kept my self from mine iniquity: therefore hath the Lord recompensed me according to my righteousness, according to the cleanness of my hands in his eye-sight: with the merciful, thou wilt shew thy self merciful, and with the upright man thou wilt shew thy self upright, &c. This David speaketh of his righteous dealing with *Saul*; and whereas his enemies laid it to his charge, that he was an enemy unto *Saul*, the Lord beareth him witness that he had walked toward *Saul* with a good conscience: now the Lord having led him an end to deal justly, and righteously, and purely with *Saul*, having kept him from all the malice and outrage of *Saul*, and maintained

tained his cause against *Saul*, and delivered him out of the hands of *Saul*, whom the Lord had now rejected; herein the Prophet seeth the Lord accepting him, when in the name of his Son, by the power of his Spirit, he is helped to attend unto the Commandments of God. This is comfortable unto a Christian spirit, when the Lord beareth witness to his soul, that he hath an eye to all the Commandments of God. And all this argueth that the servants of God, being in a state of Grace in Jesus Christ, have looked at themselves as bound by the Commandments of the *Law*, and as *being under the Law to Christ*, who hath given the *Law*, and power unto his servants sincerely to keep it, both by writing in their hearts a law of *obedience*, and by putting his holy Spirit within them: for if the people of God were not sensible of their bounden duty to the observation of the *Law* of God, they would neither have faith, nor sense of Gods fatherly displeasure when they negligently break these laws; neither would they be sensible of Gods acceptance of their conformity thereunto; but we know what the Apostle *Paul* saith, 2 Cor. 1. 12. *For our rejoycing is this, the testimony of our Conscience, that in simplicity, and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world, &c.* and truly the Lord doth often bear witness unto the integrity of his servants against the oppositions of men; so he did to *Abraham*, to *David*, to *Paul*, and to sundry of the Saints of God: though the servants of God are not wonted thereupon to build their safe estate, yet this kind of Gods acceptance of their wayes and obedience they do discern; yet in their best obedience, which they do perform, they see the need they have to go unto God for justifying



justifying Grace, because if they have failed in any  
 one circumstance, their best righteousness is pollut-  
 ed; therefore they have need of Jesus Christ to  
 cover the failings of their most strict performances.  
 This *Nehemiah* was sensible of, when he had been  
 very faithful in reforming the abuses of the *Sab-*  
*bath*, and of many other Ordinances of God: and  
 though the Lord hath helped him to undertake the  
 reformation with much dexterity, and success; yet  
 for all this he runneth unto Christ for acceptance  
 and pardon, *Nehem. 13. 22. Remember me, O my*  
*God, concerning this, and spare me according to the*  
*greatness of thy mercy:* and what would he have  
 done if he had been conscious of some gross sin? He  
 would then much more have run to the Lord Je-  
 sus. Thus the *Law* is established by Faith; for  
 there is no justified person, but he is very apprehen-  
 sive of his sins, and so of his continual need of  
 Christ, *whose blood cleanseth us from all sin, 1 Joh. 1. 7.*  
*and who is faithful and just to forgive our sins, and*  
*to cleanse us from all unrighteousness,* *vers. 9.* who is  
 an Advocate if any man sin, and a propitiation for our  
 sins, *Chap. 2. 1, 2.* and what do all these things ar-  
 gue? but that a Christian being under the Cove-  
 nant of the Grace of God, doth submit himself un-  
 to this yoke of God. Thus far then a Christian is  
 under the *Law* to Christ; so far as the *Law* is un-  
 der Christ, he is under the Commandment of  
 Christ, and under the power of Christ, and under the  
 displeasure of Christ, if he negligently sin against  
 the *Law*; and unto Christ he runneth for par-  
 don, and cleansing, and unto Christ he cometh  
 for acceptance of his obedience: so that he hath no  
 use of the *Law*, but unto Christ, and in and under  
 Jesus Christ.

But

But how is a Christian *not under the Law*?

So far forth as the *Law* is not under Christ; I mean, so far as it is without Christ freely justifying of us by his grace, so far a Christian is freed from under the *Law*. In one word, a Christian man under a Covenant of Grace, is not under a Covenant of Works. *Rom. 6. 14. You are not under the Law, but under Grace*: he meaneth, not under the Covenant of the *Law*, nor under the power and authority of the *Law*, as of their husband, *Rom. 7. 1, 2, 3, 4*. The husbandly Jurisdiction of the *Law* is taken away; The *Law* is not made for a righteous man, *1 Tim. 1. 9.* that is, not the Covenant of the *Law*, for else we are under the Commandments of the *Law* to Christ; but the Jewish Teachers taught more, to wit, the Covenant of the *Law* unto Salvation: not but that the *Law* is good, if a man use it lawfully; he meaneth the Covenant of the *Law*: but how shall a man use it lawfully? for it is not given unto a righteous man; but he reckoneth up the breakers of every Commandment, and unto them it is given; to the lawless, and disobedient; to the ungodly, and sinners; to the unholy, and profane; to murderers of fathers, and murderers of mothers; to man-slayers, and whoremongers; and to them that defile themselves with man-kind; to men-stealers, to liars, to perjured persons, and if there be any other things that are contrary to sound Doctrine: the Covenant of the *Law* is given unto such (and unto none but such) to convince them of their sins against the *Law*, to humble them to the death, and to drive them out of themselves, and confidence in themselves. But how doth it appear that the Covenant of the *Law* is not given to the children of God? from hence it is manifest;

Recall a Christian man neither looketh for justification and Salvation from his Obedience to the Law, nor feareth Condemnation though he fail in his Obedience; And this is a fruit of his exemption from under the Covenant of the Law: For if a man should look for Life by his Obedience to the Law, and fear condemnation by the breach of it, this would bring a man under the Covenant of the Law: for the sanctification of the Covenant of the Law, is life to them that obey; and to them that disobey, death, and the curse. But a Christian looketh not for Life by his Obedience; and that is plain, Psal. 143. 2. *Enter not into Judgment with thy servant, for in thy sight shall no flesh living be justified.* Sol. Rom. 3. 20. *By the deeds of the Law there shall no flesh be justified, for by the Law is the knowledge of sin:* therefore no hope of Salvation from our Obedience to the Law. But methinks (you will say) a Christian may fear his condemnation because of his Disobedience to the Law. Truly this is a great snare, and this Doctrine will be scandalous to many a poor soul, but without cause: Indeed, if God give a man to be under the Covenant of Grace, and not to see it, then he may fear; but if a man know himself to be under the Covenant of Grace, then he doth not fear condemnation from his disobedience: notable for this purpose is the confidence of David, Psal. 49. 5. where the Prophet calleth upon all people in the world to take notice of it, *Both men of high degree, and men of low degree: Wherefore should I fear in the days of wrath, when the iniquities of my heels shall compass me about?* wherefore? truly if there be any fear in the world, one would think this might procure it: what should a man fear, if not this? David professeth it, and would have all to know it, that there is



no cause therein why a Christian man should fear, *Wherefore should I fear?* &c. though it should follow you to the stocks, or to prison, yet there is no cause why it should make you fear: Men that trust themselves in their wealth, and boast themselves in the multitude of their riches, none of them can by any means ransom his Brother, nor give to God a ransom for him, thus he should live for ever, and not see corruption: had David had nothing but the wealth of his Kingdom, he might have feared well enough; but here is his confidence, *ver. 15. God will redeem my Soul from the power of the grave, for he shall receive me.* But will not this make a Christian wanton against God, and cause him to abuse his liberty to hardness of heart? no, and, brethren, this is the kindly melting of a godly heart, to consider a Redeemers love drawing him from the power of the grave, and that he should by his sacrifice the Lord Jesus Christ; this melts his heart more then all his other sins, specially considering the abounding Grace of God, which where sin hath abounded, grace aboundeth much more: thus when a man doth not look for life by his own Righteousness, but knoweth the Redemption of souls to be more precious then so; this steeleth a man not to be under a Covenant of Works, and then his very iniquity shall not make him afraid: there is such a state in Christianity, and all men know it. But will it not make men think the worse of Christs profession? No, David will have all to know it, that they may see the difference between all worldly confidences, and the confidence of Christians: all their glory will leave them, as be like the Beasts that perish, and cannot redeem their souls, that the Lord only might be exalted.

22 As a Christian looketh not for Salvation

his obedience to the Law, nor feareth condemnation by his disobedience: so neither doth he seek for any blessing from his obedience, nor fear any curse from his disobedience; he seeketh not for blessings from his obedience, and therefore if there be any promises of blessing made to any obedience, though God should help him to as much obedience as might be, he doth not look for any blessing from that obedience, Rom. 4. 4, 5, 6. To him that worketh, the reward is not reckoned of grace, but of debt; but to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted to him for righteousness, even as David describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works. He looketh not for his blessedness from his works; though he should perform all the conditions to which the promises are made, yet he expecteth all his blessings from free justification, and union with the Lord Jesus Christ: blessed is the man to whom the Lord imputeth no sin, this is the blessedness of Christians. It is true, the Lord doth bless the workings of his servants, and accept them, Mat. 25. 34, 35, 36. The King shall say unto them on his right hand: Come ye blessed of my father, inherit the Kingdome prepared for you, from the foundation of the world: for I was an hungry, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: naked, and ye clothed me: sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Thus Christ blesteth them: but they are not sensible of their good deeds, so as to expect blessings for their obedience sake, and therefore they make answer, and say, Lord, when saw we thee an hungry, and fed thee: or thirsty, and gave thee drink? &c. neither do they fear the curse of God, or that their sins should sepa-

them from God: those that are under the *Law*, are cursed indeed, if they do not continue in all things that are written in the *Law* to do them; but this curse is removed from the elect by Jesus Christ.

3. This also is a third effect of the freedom from the Covenant of Works; that a Christian doth not look for *conjugal comfort* from his obedience, nor fear *conjugal divorce* from his disobedience. In a Covenant of works, it is with a man, as it was with *Leah*, *Jacob's* wife, who expected love and fellowship from her husband, because of her fruitfulness, *Gen. 29. 32.* when she brought forth her first born, she said, *Now therefore will my husband love me*; and when she brought forth her third son, ver. 34. *Now this time will my husband be joynted unto me*: but thus doth not a man under a Covenant of Grace; for when he hath done all he can, he is ready to say, *I am an unprofitable servant*, *Luke 17. 10.* and doth not challenge God for any of his dealing with him: he seeth he deserveth not his daily bread, and so looks for no reward from his good works: though the Lord will graciously acknowledg his servants in what they do according to his will, yet they are not wont to plead any such thing; which is very observable in the practice of *Jacob*, *Gen. 32. 9, 10.* &c. *O Lord God of my Father Abraham, and God of my father Isaac, the Lord which saidst unto me, Return unto thy Countrey, and to thy kindred, and I will deal well with thee; I am less than the least of all the mercies and truth which thou hast shewed unto thy servant.* So he doth not press his performance of Gods Commandment to procure blessing, but acknowledgeth his unworthiness, and looketh for Grace from the Promise of God. *Deliver me, I pray thee, from the hand of my brother; for thou saidest, I will surely*



the Lord: Nor doth a child of God fear divorce by his disobedience; though it have been very great. Sometimes the people of God have not only rejected the servants of God, but the Lord himself, 1 Sam. 8. 7. but when Samuel had pressed hard upon them for their sin, chap. 12. and they were truly humbled, then Samuel said unto them (ver. 20, 21, 22.) *Fear not (ye have done all this wickedness, yet turn not aside from following the Lord, but serve the Lord with all your heart: and turn not you aside, for then you should go after vain things that cannot profit nor deliver (for they are vain): for the Lord will not forsake his people, for his great Name sake: because it hath pleased the Lord to make you his people, therefore fear you not, he will not cast you off.* So that (mind you) a poor Christian doth not fear divorce from his disobedience: for if we should look for blessing from the one, or cursing from the other, we were not under Christ, but under the Law: but he that is freed from the Covenant of Works, is freed also from expecting salvation, or fearing damnation from what he doth; he knoweth the Lord will hide his face from him if he do evil, but he knoweth the Lord will not cast him off for ever; yet he dares not commit sin, but being under Grace, he is the more affected if he shall at any time displease God, and procure chastisement to himself: and by this means the Lord doth mortifie his distempers. On the other side, if he do well, he will not say, Now my husband will cleave unto me, and dwell with me; no, we are freed from the Law, Rom. 7. 4. which we were not, if we look for conjugal love from God, in our obedience to the Law: it is true, if a man be married to the Law, his obedience unto it will supply comfort unto him; but if we be dead unto

the Law, we have no life in it, nor by it, but only in Jesus Christ; from whom we expect our comfort: indeed we are troubled that we should live against the grace of God, otherwise we look not at our obedience or disobedience, to make us accepted or rejected.

4. And finally, the soul doth not claim his right unto any conditional promise, by his performance of the condition; nor doth he deny himself the blessing that the promise may reach forth unto him, though he be wanting in obedience to this or that Commandment: pregnant for this purpose is the example of Jacob (which we mentioned before) Gen. 32: 9, 10, who though he had a plain and a full promise of God, to do him good if he would return to his Countrey, and to his kindred, yet when he did return according to the word of God, he claimed not his interest in that promise, for that he had done as God commanded him, but *I am left about the least of thy mercies*; and yet he cometh unto the Lord for the performance of his promises, but not upon this ground; only for the sake of mercy and truth, *Deliver me I pray thee: for thou saidst, I will surely do thee good*, ver. 11, 12. so that (mind you) though the soul can make use of a conditional promise, and come to God for the blessing of it, yet not expecting it in the least manner, by vertue of his obedience; and truly this is the freedome of a Christian soul; whereas another man, if he have kept the Commandment, and performed the condition, he then looketh for acceptance from God as if the Lord make this promise, that *he that confesseth and forsaketh his sin, shall find mercy*; this man confesseth his sin unto God, and forsaketh it, therefore he looketh for mercy: but this is not the manner

manner of Gods people; and yea if they look for any mercy, it is in the way of God, but not because of their own goodness; their hope is in the faithfulness, and free grace of God: they may make mention to the praise of God, how he hath guided them, and carried them an end in his own wayes; yet they challenge nothing from any thing that they have done, but put the Lord in mind of his free promise, that as of his free grace he hath freely promised: so from the same grace he may make good what he hath promised.

Use 1. Is any therefore shall accuse the Doctrine of the Covenant of free Grace of *Antinomianism*, and say, it teacheth men freedom from the Law of Moses; and if they commit any sin, they plead they are not bound unto the Law: we see how false such an aspersions would be: for all the people of God know, that the Lord is an avenger of every such wickedness. There is none under a Covenant of Grace that dare allow himself in any sin: for if a man should negligently commit any sin, the Lord will school him throughly, and make him sadly to apprehend how he hath made bold with the treasures of the grace of God. Shall we continue in sin, that Grace may abound? God forbid: None that have a portion in the grace of God, dareth therefore allow himself in sin; but if through strength of temptation he be at any time carried aside, it is his greatest burthen: 2 Sam. 12. 8, 9. compared 13. *Had not the Lord (saith Nathan) done these and these things for thee? Wherefore thou hast thou despised the Commandment of the Lord? then David confessed that he had sinned.* It picured him to the heart to consider it, that he should abuse his Neighbours wife, and kill her husband, and commit such wickedness



cedness against God, that had dealt so graciously with him. So that the children of the Covenant of grace will only tell you, that they are free from the Covenant of the Law, but not from the Commandment of it: for as it is given by Jesus Christ, and ratified in the Gospel; and as Christ hath given us his Spirit enabling us to keep it, we are under it so far, as to take our selves bound by the authority of it; and if we do transgress against it, we know it is sin in the sight of God, and therefore it is that the soul in such a case is sensible of the wrath and displeasure of God, whether it be his own sin, or the sin of his brethren: therefore he runneth unto God for mercy, which he would not do, if he did not know, that his desert according to the Law did utterly cut him off from mercy; else would he never pray for pardon of sin, nor rejoyce when the Lord helpeth him to do that which is right and just in his sight, nor bless the Lord for strengthening him unto obedience, unless he thought it to be his duty: and therefore,

Use 2. It is of use also to teach the servants of God, how far they are freed from the Law, to wit, from the Covenant of it, so that they neither look for justification, nor salvation from it. And let it not be grievous to any soul, that a Christian should say, He doth not fear condemnation by his disobedience: he will be apt to fear in this kind, untill he be assured of the favour of God: but when he knoweth his position in the Covenant, then indeed he doth not fear condemnation by his sin, nor doth he think that the Lord will cleave him, because of his frailties: he casteth not off his comfort, nor looketh on himself as divorced from Christ, because of his barrenness.

rennes

himself before the Lord; nor doth he look for his daily bread from all his obedience, but expecteth all goodness and blessing from the treasures of the free grace of God.

Use 3. This may also serve to teach men some kind of discernment of their own spirits, and state: if you look for Justification no longer then you are obedient; and fear eternal condemnation when you are disobedient; if you be afraid of divorce from Christ because of your sins, or if you look for any blessing, and challenge right to any promise, by virtue of any well-doing of your own; in such a case either thou art under a Covenant of works, or at the least thou art gone aside to a Covenant of works; and if ever the Lord open your eyes, and bestow his free grace upon you, you will know your redemption on from such dependances as these be. I know a Christian man, that hath not been clearly taught the distinct differences of the two Covenants, may be misled into dangerous waies, that might tend unto the utter undoing of his soul; but it is a sin of ignorance, and the Lord will not leave his servants; but clear up his truth and grace unto them.

Use 4. May serve to teach the servants of God, that desire to walk in a way of constant comfort; how to build their faith and their hope: truly if they be grounded upon your own obedience, or righteousness, or sanctification; if they depend upon you, you will find your hearts ever unsettled: you may find comfort, as under the Law you shall; for if a man be married to the Law, the Law will call in comforts upon him because of his obedience; but if you shall believe that Christ is yours, and comfort your selves because you have been by the power of the Law constrained

constrained to duties, and restrained from sin, and thereupon build your conjugal communion with Jesus Christ, you will find your souls full of sadness and fear ere long, specially if you have true grace in your hearts: and therefore it is the faithfulness and tenderness of the grace of God unto his people, that when Christians come into this Countrey, though they have been marvellous eminent in our native Countrey, they cannot pray fervently, nor hear the word with profit, nor receive the seals with comfort: they wonder what is become of their old prayers and hearings, and Sacraments, and of their lively spirits in holy duties: truly the Lord hath disabled them (as it were) from such things, because they did build their union and fellowship with Jesus Christ upon them, that so they might know the freedom of the grace of God, that justifieth the Ungodly: then will the poor soul be glad to seek after the Lord Jesus Christ, and say (as the people of God sometimes did, *Hos. 2. 17.*) *I will go, and return to my first husband: for then was in better with me then now:* now the soul will plainly see and discern, that he closed not with his true Husband, when as he built so much hope and comfort upon his duties: therefore he will find himself weak, and dead (as it were) to all spiritual duties, and can find no life in them, no comfort from them: and it is the marvellous goodness, and free grace of God unto such a soul, whom the Lord will not suffer to blesse himself in his works: for if a man should lay the foundation of his comfort in them, and be ready as it were to take it ill, if he should not find God accepting his works: *Wherefore have we fasted, and thou regardest it not? Isa. 58. 3.* If a man rejoyce in that which he hath builded, this shall he receive



receive at the hands of God, to lye down in sorrow, Isa. 56. 11. whereas the light of God shall graciously break forth unto the servants of God, though they wait upon him, though they be for present in darkness, and see no light. Trust not therefore in any legal comforts, but wait upon the free grace of God, both to justify, sanctifie, comfort, and glorifie your souls; and this is the way of constant peace: and if the Lord do at any time check his servants, when they walk in by-ways, it is, that he may build them upon a surer foundation. So that their salvation will not lye upon their obedience, nor damnation be procured by their disobedience; this is the way of constant peace and safety unto all the Israel of God.

*Quest. 7.* This Doctrine may serve in the next place, to answer a seventh Question, touching the necessity of Sanctification. For it may be demanded, If the Lord will give himself unto the soul in the Covenant of his Grace, not only his attributes, but his person; all that is God is given by vertue of this Covenant: If God will give himself, not only to choose us to life and glory, but his Son to redeem us, and his holy Spirit to sanctifie us, Ezek. 36. 27. what need is there of Sanctification: for if the Holy Ghost will dwell in us, he can take our wits, and understanding, and understand all our Meditations for us, without any such actual concurrence of ours, as might be requisite for that end: if the Lord give himself to be my righteousness, and holiness, what need I then these gifts of holiness? So that this in sum is the Question, If the Lord will give unto us himself, what need we these gifts to work any thing, which God is much more able to perform then we can be? This springeth naturally from the Doctrine,

*Ans.*

*Ans.* Though the Lord giveth us himself, and his holy Spirit to dwell in us, yet is it needful that we should be indued with all the gifts of the Spirit of Grace that do accompany salvation. You will say, What need is there then that the *Holy Ghost* should dwell in us? or will not these carry an end our souls unto immortality? Truly we have need that the Lord should give us his holy Spirit to dwell in us, notwithstanding all the gifts of his grace, though they indeed are necessary conditions to be found in the souls of all Gods servants, *Heb. 12. 14. Follow peace and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.* As if he made it of absolute necessity to salvation, not only in another world, but for a comfortable condition in this world; follow Peace and Holiness, as if so be that they were ready to fly away from a man; and indeed the word doth imply no less: for *sewre*, doth signifie the pursuit of something that fleeth from a man, as peace will many times flee from one, and a man will have much ado to attain unto it, *Psal. 120. 6, 7. My soul hath long dwelt with him that hateth peace: I am for peace; but when I speak, they are for war:* it is not easily attained unto, therefore should not be suffered to depart, but held fast when it is enjoyed. And so for *Holiness*: the Apostle would have us make an holy kind of pursuit after it, as if it were still withdrawing from us; which cometh through the corruptions of our hearts: for we are soon weary of holy Duties, as Prayer, or Conference, or the like: if Holiness be in any thing, it soon groweth wearisome to flesh and blood; but though our weak and feeble nature will be withdrawing us from holiness, yet the Lord would have us to follow it, and pursue it; and so shall a man be withdrawn from the world,

world, and from the temptations and bad examples thereof. Do not say, What, shall we be wiser then our Fathers? and, Is not Moderation best in all things? but consider what the Apostle saith, *Follow* till after it, even unto perfection; and his words do intimate the reason of it, *without which no man shall see the Lord*: for what is *Holiness* in its own nature? it is that which giveth God his due, as *Righteousness* giveth man his due. And this is a main ground why we are so slow in works of holiness; for were they of another nature, and did they serve our turns more, as we think, we should not then account them tedious; If I were to sit and tell money all day long, this is for my self (saith a man) and for my profit; and if it were for another, we should not think the time long, it may be, at that work neither: but (mind you) when it cometh to any thing which doth concern the Lord, then it's so far above a mans reach, whatsoever we have to do in the things of God, that we should soon be weary of reaching forth our hands all the day long unto the Lord, and to be constantly for God, from God, and with God, in all our Actions: our base spirits are soon ready to be withdrawing from the Lord; therefore the Apostle biddeth us *follow after Peace, and Holiness, without which no man shall see God*: so that great is the necessity of Holiness, and worthy to be followed after: for though a mans own heart, and the world, and men, and Satan withdraw us from it, yet *follow* after it, for *without it no man shall see God*. There is a kind of holiness which some men have attained unto, many a fair day ago, but 'tis a thousand to one, whether it be the holiness which doth accompany salvation, for that Holiness is not easily attained unto; but the



the other will easily cleave close unto a man.

*1<sup>st</sup> Quest.* Now if you shall ask me, wherefore the Lord will have us *pursue* after Holiness; and what needeth it, If the Spirit of Holiness dwell in me by an everlasting Covenant: if it did withdraw from us as it did from Adam, it was another matter, but though it may be quenched in us, yet *abide* it for ever: what need then of gifts of Holiness?

*Ans.* That one word may be sufficient, which we find in *2 Tim. 2. 21.* If any man purge himself from these evils, he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified and meet for the Masters use, and prepared unto every good work. This sheweth us why gifts of Holiness are requisite to be in Gods people, namely that they might become meet instruments in the hands of God, and fitted unto every good word and work: therefore it is, that the Lord will have us to be filled with all the gifts of Righteousness, and fruits of his Spirit, that we might be more fit Temples for the Holy Ghost to dwell in: and this is the principal Reason of the Point.

*2<sup>d</sup> Q.* If then there be such gifts of holiness, what need the Holy Ghost dwell in us? is it not enough that he should shed abroad these things into our hearts? cannot the Lord carry on end the work of our salvation by these gifts?

*Ans.* There is need that the Holy Ghost should dwell in us, notwithstanding. 1. To keep these gifts in us. 2. To *act* them in us. 3. To witness them unto our souls, for our comfort, and the good of another. Some Scriptures for all these.

1. That there is need of the Holy Ghost to keep these things in us, *2 Tim. 1. 14.* That good thing

which was committed unto thee, keep by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us. There is a very worthy thing committed to us, how shall we keep it? not by our own wit and wisdom, careful watchfulness, and faithfulness, (though such things ought not to be wanting) but the charge is, *Keep those things by the Holy Ghost which dwelleth in us.* We stand in need of gifts, to be fit instruments in the hands of God; we stand in need of the Spirit of God, to maintain that which God giveth us; and though *Adams* gifts were in perfection, yet not having the *holy Ghost* to keep them for him, they all flie from him as soon as ever he had tasted of the forbidden fruit, and left him naked and desperate. Therefore in the Covenant of Grace the Lord giveth the *Holy Ghost* to keep strong possession in his servants, against the strong man armed. This is the first ground why the *Holy Ghost* dwelleth in us: *scilicet* to keep the gifts given to us, and enable them in us; for the *Holy Ghost* who keepeth possession, doth derive continued strength into our faith, which putteth life into all the gifts of God. And if you shall ask how love, and patience, and the rest of the gifts of God do work? The *Holy Ghost* stirreth up faith to look unto Christ, who returneth strength by his Spirit unto Faith; and so faith worketh by love, and by meekness, and by all the rest of the fruits of the Spirit. Thus the Spirit of God *acteth* according to what we read, *Rom. 8. 14. As many as are led by the Spirit of God, are the sons of God:* come to any holy duty, and it is the *Holy Ghost*, that leadeth you along, and *acteth* in you: *10. Ezek. 36. 27. I will put my Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and you shall keep my judgments, and do them.* And, *holy men of*

God speak as they were moved by the Holy Ghost: It is the Spirit of God that moveth us to any good work, and that addeth the gifts of his grace in us.

3. The Spirit of God doth not only keep these gifts for us, and adde them in us; but it is the same Spirit of God that witnesseth to these gifts, and sheweth what gifts he hath given us: for such is the blindness of the nature of all the Sons of men, and it is a wonder to see, that generally Christians when the Lord first worketh these gifts in them, not one of a thousand but they think they are in a sad and fearful condition, & so they are very uncomfortable: but now lest that we should alwayes mistake that which the Lord hath given us, we have received the Spirit of God, that we might know the things that are freely given unto us of God, 1 Cor. 2. 12. he indeed taketh his own time to discover it, to some sooner, to some later, but this is his intendment, that he might honour his grace unto us, by all the rich and gracious gifts which he hath given us.

He doth also reveal unto us the duties which he helpeth us to do, Rom. 9. 1. *I say the truth in Christ, I lye not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the holy Ghost, That I have great heaviness, and continual sorrow in mine heart: For I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ; for my Brethren, my Kinsmen according to the flesh. The Holy Ghost that wrought in him this brotherly-love, the same Holy Ghost beareth him witness that he doth not lie; and that he had continual sorrow in his heart, and that he could have wished to have been accursed from Christ, that they might be saved: it grieved him so much that the whole Nation should be destitute of the Lord Jesus Christ.*

In him God

Thus



Thus we see how great need there is of the Holy Ghost to dwell in us, to keep all the gifts of his grace in us, to act them according to his will, and to discover to us what gracious gifts the Lord hath wrought in us, and what duties he hath helped us to do, that we may be able to give account of them by the Holy Ghost that dwelleth in us, and beareth witness with us. So there is necessity both of the gift of grace, that we may be fit Temples for the Holy Ghost to dwell in, and fit instruments for him to work by: there is need also the Holy Ghost should dwell in us, for the causes we have spoken unto.

And I might add this, to comfort us in all the changes that may come upon us: it is a strong Scripture which we read in Job. 15. 26. *When the comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me,* (our Divines have no place of more clear evidence to prove the procession of the Spirit from the Father) both of what mighty redemption he hath wrought for us, and what grace he hath wrought in us. This the Holy Ghost shall testify, even he that proceedeth from the Father; this is the comfort of Gods people. Thus we see both these points opened to us.

3. *Quest.* How may we then employ and improve this Sanctification which the Lord hath given us, and which he keepeth and acteth in us by his Spirit, and whereunto he beareth witness? How, or to what end shall we employ it, seeing the Lord undertaketh to do these things for us?

*Answer.* If so be it, that the Lord Jesus Christ by his Spirit giveth us these gifts: It is our part then to see that we do not rest in any sanctification,

H

which

which doth spring from Christ, conveyed unto us by his blessed Spirit. The Spirit knitteth us unto Christ, and Christ unto us; he worketh faith in us to receive whatsoever the Lord giveth unto us, and by the same faith worketh all our holiness for us, 1 Cor. 1. 30. *Christ is made unto us of God, wisdom, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption*: therefore we are to see him principal author of all these things in us, and for us. This is the principal comfort of all, and the glory of all our safety; and so far as any of these lieth in our Sanctification, we ought to see that it be sanctification in Jesus Christ; and then it is sanctification in Jesus Christ, when the Lord giveth us to look unto the Lord Jesus in it, and to it in him; and as we look for our holiness to be perfect in Jesus Christ, so we look for continual supply of it from him: and this it is to make Christ our sanctification, when as whatsoever gift the Lord giveth us, we go not forth in the strength of it but in the strength of *Jesus Christ*. There may be a change in the soul, which may spring from a spirit of bondage, and may captivate our consciences unto the Law, that may restrain us from sin and constrain us unto duties: but such holiness springeth not from union with *Jesus Christ*; for there may be a conscience of duty, without sense of our need of Jesus Christ: as it was with the Israelites at Mount Sinai, Deut 5. 27. *Go thou neer (say they to Moses) and hear all that the Lord our God shall say, and speak thou unto us, all that the Lord our God shall speak unto thee, and we will bear it and do it: they have well said, all that they have spoken, saith the Lord: O that there were an heart in them, that they would fear me, and so forth.* This I say, therefore, is the

first thing to be attended unto ; as ever you would make a right use of your holiness , see that it be such as floweth from Jesus Christ, and that there be not only an heart awed with the *Law*, but waiting upon Jesus Christ to be all in all in us, and to us : so shall we neither neglect the gifts of God in us, nor Christ, and his Spirit , but shall give their due honour unto all of them together.

2. This may also teach all Christians not to *trust* upon the gifts of their *Holiness* : though they do spring from the *Holy Ghost* himself, though they be such as are unchangeable, though they spring from Jesus Christ, and knit your souls in Union with him; yet *trust* not in the gifts themselves : the Lord layeth it down as the Apostacy of Israel, Ezek. 16. 14, 15. *Thy renown went forth among the Heathen, for thy beauty, for it was perfect through my comeliness which I had put upon thee, saith the Lord God. But thou didst trust in thine own beauty, and playedst the Harlot, &c.* Trust not therefore in any of these; but let all our confidence be in Jesus Christ, not in any of the gifts of his Spirit, whatsoever. For a little further opening of it.

1. Trust not in any gifts that you have received for the performance of any duty, for it is not the strongest Christian that is able to put forth a good thought, 1 Cor. 3. 5. *But our sufficiency is of God. He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.* Job. 15. 5. And the Apostle Paul cannot only not do any great matter by his own strength and grace, nor nothing at all without Jesus Christ; and therefore he giveth us to understand, that *it is God that worketh in us both to will and to do*, Phil. 2. 12. if therefore we have any new work to do, look to the Lord



Jesus Christ afresh by Faith, that he may carry an  
 end our works in us, and for us; otherwise it  
 is not any strength or grace in us, that can produce  
 any good work, word, or thought: And therefore  
 (mind you) the Apostle maketh it a Principle of  
 Christian Religion, that *The just man liveth by his  
 Faith*; and he often mentioneth it, *Gal. 2. 20. The life  
 which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the  
 Son of God*; where he putteth it into his own expe-  
 rience: why? did he not live by Love, and Patience,  
 and Zeal? &c. Yes truly, they were lively in him,  
 if ever in any man, besides our blessed Saviour; and  
 yet notwithstanding, he never attributed life to any  
 of these gifts of his; but if he speak of his Life, he  
 maketh this his Universal Life, *I live by the Faith  
 of the Son of God, and I am able to do all things through  
 Christ which strengtheneth me, Phil. 4. 13.* This is the  
 true saviour of a Christian spirit, that when gifts  
 are at the highest, the heart is then at the lowest.  
*1 Cor. 15. 9, 10.* The Apostle Paul there acknow-  
 ledgeth himself to be as one born out of due time  
 for (saith he) *I am less than the least of the Apostles  
 not meet to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted  
 the Church of God; I, but by the grace of God I am what  
 I am, and his grace which was bestowed upon me was  
 not in vain, but I laboured more abundantly than they  
 all, yet not I, but the grace of God in me.* This is true-  
 ly spiritual sanctification, that when the soul is full  
 of the Holy Ghost, and gifts of the Holy Ghost, yet  
 is like a man in great penury, as having nothing  
 himself: This is a marvelous spiritual poverty, as  
 you shall ever find (and I desire the Lord would open  
 the hearts of his people to know what I speak) that  
 if Christians have fallen, their greatest falls have  
 been in their most exemplary gifts. If you

shall mark the sins of all the servants of God; they have been chiefly found in the very exercise of their best gifts. Let us take a little taste of them, that we may learn to use our gifts in the strength of Jesus Christ.

*Abraham*, a man full of faith, none went beyond him in Old or new Testament: yet if you read of any failing in him, it is in want of the acting of faith. What made him afraid not once, but the second time, that his wife would be taken away from him by *Pharaoh*? *Gen. 12.* by *Abimelech*? *chap. 20.* Had not the Lord promised that he would bless him where so ever he came? *Gen. 12. 2.* He had so much of the knowledge and grace of God shining in him, that *Sarah* needed not have dissembled; and *Abimelech* (a poor Heathen) could say as much, *chap. 20. 16.* *Should, thy husband is a covering of the eyes to all that are with thee, and with all other; thus she was reproved:* if he should say, Thou needest no shifts and lies, or thy protections, and to be a vail unto thee: as a poor Heathen can discern, that such a man hath God with him, needeth no other shifts nor covering to defend and shelter him. Thus we see that these great failings of *Abraham*, were proper signs of unbelief. *Moses*, a meek man, none like him in the world on the face of the earth; there is but one story of him after he was called to the Government of that State, and this was his failing; *Hear ye ye rebels, Must we fetch you water out of this rock?* he lift up his hand, and with his rod he smote the rock twice, *Num. 20. 10, 11.* they provoked *Moses* meek as he was: sometimes, when *Aaron* and *Miriam* dealt as peremptorily with him, he was not moved from the meekness of his spirit: but now falleth into *Passion*, and this was the very sin,

for which the Lord excluded him out of Canaan, Numb. 27. 12, 13, 14. It was the breach of his royal grace, chap. 20. 12. Because ye believed me not, to sanctifie me in the eyes of the children of Israel, therefore you shall not bring this congregation into the Land which I have sworn to them: which words shew us the reason of his failing in the grace wherein he so much abounded, because ye beleived me not. The Lord will have him know, that he must live by his faith in his meekness. If any man think himself to be a meek man, and nothing shall over-wrastle him there, if you believe not in God but in your meekness, your confidence will soon fail you. Peter a man full of courage, and you read of two of his principal failings, and both in point of courage; he failed in the high Priests Hall at the voice of a Damisell, and in the porch at the speech of another Maid; and the third time, at the voice of one that stood by, Mat. 26. 69. &c. whereas afterward when he lived by faith, he became undaunted. Another failing of his in point of courage we read of, Gal. 2. 12. He feared those of the circumcision; and whereas before he did eat with the Gentiles, when certain of the Circumcision came from James, he withdrew, and separated himself and so dissembled, and others likewise with him, insomuch, that Barnabas also was carried away, with their dissimulation. Thus the Apostle Peters most eminent gifts did not bring forth their fruits. Know therefore, that the best of all your gifts, faith, meekness, courage, wisdom, love to your brethren, will fail, if you trust in them; and you will be most apt to fail there wherein you do most excel. If a man be wise, he shall fail in that point, and it may be in nothing so much, as in this even in those things wherein he thinketh he walketh



most wisely ; and such an one will find most trials in point of his wisdom ; and the like will be found in all other graces, and all to this end, to teach the *Israel* of God to know, that no man liveth by his wisdom, nor by any thing in himself, but by faith in Jesus Christ, whom God hath given unto his people ; and who is only able to give new supplies of his Spirit unto his servants to act every gift which he hath given them. I might have mentioned the example of *Sarah*, a meek and a quiet godly spirited woman, subject and obedient to her Husband, and called him *Lord* ; whose daughters you are while you do well, 1 Pet. 3. 6. and yet you know one of her greatest failings, was in point of *Reverence* to her husband, Gen. 16. 5. *When she saw that she was despised in the eyes of her maid, whom she had given unto her husband, she said to Abraham, My wrong be upon thee, and the Lord judge between me and thee.* Where is the reverence of *Sarah* now ? Will you have the daughters of *Sarah* to imitate her herein ? What had her Husband done ? There was no fault in him in this matter ; she had no reason to tax him upon this point : it was her own counsel, ver. 2. that he should go in to her maid, that I may obtain children by her : therefore there was no colour of any just complaint on her part : yet see, this meek-spirited woman failed in the point of her meeknesse herein, and did expresse no greater failing all her life long, that we read of : she was weak in faith once, but there was great reason, for that her womb was dead, and her *Lord* (as she called him) was old also ; nor doth the Angel so much blame her about it : but that action wherein she most failed, was against that grace wherein she most abounded. And though ever grace of the Spirit be of great force, when the

Lord doth act and move it, yet let a man go forth in the strength of his greatest gifts, and if ever his heart fail him, it will be in them.

Think not when you have done all you can, that you are worthy of any thing, but say, that you are unprofitable servants; for though *Sanctification* be the way wherein the Lord will pour out all his blessings upon his servants, yet he doth require them to boast in none of their excellencies, but look at them all as freely given them of God; and consider that the right unto all springeth from fellowship with Jesus Christ, that so not only the gift it self is grace, but the *blessing* that followeth upon it is grace also. And suppose that we have attained all that we pray for, shall we then exalt our own gifts? No, but let us say with *Jaob*, Gen. 32. 10. *I am less then the least of all the mercies and truth which thou hast shewed unto thy servant.*

Do not trust upon gifts, nor upon duties performed by those gifts, to reach the blessings; so look not for your justification from thence at all: for the Apostle is plain, that he looked not for any thing for his righteousness before his conversion, and after his conversion, he counteth it all, as dross, and dung, that he might win Christ, *Pb. 3. 6, 7, 8.* And for our faith; they are not to be trusted upon, as grounds of it: for all the gifts of our sanctification, are fruits of our faith; and therefore faith is said to work by love, *Gal. 5. 6.* And so it doth by all other gifts of the Spirit; and if they be fruits of faith, then faith is not built upon them. And thus much for the second use which Christians are to make of their sanctification.

3. There is in the next place, a point of witness, which this *Sanctification* doth yeild, and the Spirit of God by it. The water beareth witness to the blood,

bloud, and the bloud to the water, and the Spirit unto both, 1 *Joh.* 5. 6, 7, 8. A mans own spirit beareth witness also, *Rom.* 8. 16. *The Spirit of God beareth witness with our spirits, that we are the children of God;* and therefore as a witness of God unto our faith, we may lawfully hear what it speaketh; but this is the life of a true evidence, that all these gifts of God do not bear witness any further then a man seeth the Lord Jesus working them in him, and for him: for it is faith that maketh all the graces of the Gospel active, and it is a condition so requisite, that unless our works be of faith, and flow from it, they are not acceptable before God, *Heb.* 11. 6. for *without faith it is impossible to please God;* therefore unless faith carry an end our works, they are not works of holiness, such as should bear witness to the soul. Therefore the Apostle doth stir up the *Corinthians* unto this mainly. *Examine your selves whether you are in the faith?* 2 *Cor.* 13. 5. if he do exhort them to examination, it is in point of faith: and therefore some of our Divines, as Reverent *Forbes of Middleburgh* by name, who hath written a Sermon upon it "wherein he noteth this, that *unless men find faith in their holiness, none of all their Sanctification will become a sound witness of the Grace of God unto them:* but if faith be found, then you shall see Jesus Christ accepting you, and bearing in you, except you be reprobates. There is a marvelous gracious witness, that sanctification giveth unto him that liveth by faith in Jesus Christ, if it be in Christ, and from Christ, and for Christ. This only is that sanctification which the Lord commendeth unto his children, to seek after it.

4. A fourth Use of our sanctification is, that the Spirit of God helpeth us by it in point of *rejoycing*; and



and therefore it is that you shall see the servants of God, rejoycing in their holiness; so doth the Apostle Paul, 2 Cor. 1. 12. *This is our rejoycing, the testimony of our conscience that in simplicity, and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our conversation in the world; he rejoyceth at what the Lord doth by him, and with him. Let every man prove his own work, and so shall he have rejoycing in himself, and not in another.* Gal. 6. 4. But what is it that maketh the Apostle to rejoyce before God? When he rejoyceth in his work before the Lord, you shall ever find him rejoycing at the Lords *acting* these gifts in him, and *blessing* him in his work: let us look upon two or three Scriptures for this end, 1 Tim. 1. 12, 13. *I thank Iesus Christ our Lord, who hath enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me into the ministry; who was before a blasphemer, &c.* this he thanketh God for: so that, mind you, as he seeth God *giving* him these gifts, and *enabling* him unto the work, so he blessed God in that behalf. You shall find him also blessing God, that had prospered this work of the Ministry wheresoever he came, 2 Cor. 2. 14. *Thanks be to God which alwaies causeth us to triumph in Christ, and maketh manifest the favour of his knowledge by us in every place.* The Lord working in him, and for him, maketh him to triumph, and to over-wrattle all the difficulties which he meeteth withal. The Lord had given him gifts, and taught him to exercise those gifts, and doth accept him; and therefore he expresseth himself in a marvelous strong speech, Phil. 1. 20, 21. *I am in nothing ashamed, but what with all boldness, as alwaies, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death: for to me live,*

is Christ: and to die, is gain: so we to live, is Christ: as he had said, I have no life but from Christ, I put forth no act of life but for Christ: this is the sum of all his conversation; and if Christ be his life, then death will be his advantage, and Christ will be magnified in either. Thus we may see how the Saints of God have made use of their sanctification; they are careful to see that it flow from Christ; and yet when they have it, they dare not trust in their best gifts for the least duty, neither do they look for their faith from their best gifts, but they expect their best gifts to flow from their faith: they make use of the testimony of their holiness, when they see Christ in it, and faith in it, and the Spirit of God carrying them along in the waies and duties thereof: thus they see their holiness, and take comfort in it, and from the witness of it, as that by which the Lord dispenseth comfort unto his people, when they receive it from the hands of Christ, and by faith in him, by which they are taught of God, to carry on and their whole conversation in his name.

5. Furthermore, as we receive it from Christ, and trust not in it, but in Christ, and receive the witness of it in Christ, and in the holy Spirit of Christ; and as we receive joy and Comfort also, which the Lord doth minister unto us, in a sanctified course, by his holy Spirit: so we grow up, and perfect our Holiness, which we have received in his Name: there is growth in grace; this sanctification is not bed-rid; Christians are not as weak now, as they were seven years ago, nor do they stand at a stay, but go forward in Christianity: and hereupon the Apostle exhorteth the Ephesians, Eph. 4. 6. to speak the truth in love, that they may grow up

up into him in all things, which is the head, even Christ, implying, that men that enter into wayes of Holiness, ought to grow on unto perfection in the fear of God. *The Righteous shall hold on his way, and he that hath cleane hands shall grow stronger and stronger,* Job 17. 9. And many sweet means the Lord hath appointed for this end; the communion of Gods people tendeth hereunto, *Prov 13. 20. He that walketh with the wise shall learn wisdom:* all the Ordinances of God are appointed for this end also, to beget and encrease faith and holiness; therefore a Christian in the use of all these Ordinances doth not stand at a stay, but is still thriving and growing; and that not in his own strength, but in the strength of Jesus Christ, seeking for his acceptance & help in every duty he goeth about: and this is that which the Apostle Paul doth exhort the *Colossians* unto chap. 2. 6, 7. *As ye have received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him, rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith.* This ought Christians mainly to attend unto; that as you see the branch, the more juice it sucketh from the root, the more fruitful it is: so also it becometh the people of God, to know, the more need we stand in to be fruitful, the more need we have to derive a continual fresh supply from the Lord Jesus Christ, that by his Spirit, renewing grace in us, we may be enlarged, and carried on end in the waies of God; whereas otherwise the hearts of Christians would soon fail to go on in those things, wherein they desire to be growing up unto perfection. What is the reason that so many servants of God, are not so lively in their profession, as they were wont to be many years ago? Truly, we attend upon Ordinances, but it is only upon the outward act of them, and  
not



not upon *Jesus Christ* in them. This is many times wanting in the hearts of Gods people; but truly if this be our constant frame, and we do not recover our selves, then is not our sanctification that which floweth from fellowship with *Jesus Christ*, and the Spirit of his grace; for you shall ever find this to be true, that there is no gift of *Jesus Christ*, nor sanctification accompanying salvation, but it doth knit us neerer and neerer unto *Christ*; for the more we are filled with true spiritual gifts, the more empty we are of our own strength, and of self-conceits, and so we ought to be; otherwise you shall constantly find this, that if the Lord do not preserve this empty frame in us, the more full we are of any gift, the more full shall we be of our own strength, and consequently we shall feel the less need of *Jesus Christ*; and if this be our constant frame, it will be a sad argument that our best sanctification will not endure, but fall away, unless we be knit unto *Jesus Christ* by the Spirit of his grace; for by all true sanctification, we are the more knit unto him: so that if any man would know whether the superscription of *Christ* and his image be stamped upon his sanctification, this you shall ever find to be the stamp of the grace of *Jesus Christ*; That the more you receive from him, the more need you stand in of him: insomuch, that notwithstanding all the gifts of the Spirit, there is not the ablest Minister of the New Testament, but (if your gifts flow from the Spirit of *Christ*, and knit you unto *Christ*) you will find as great need to cleave unto *Jesus Christ*, as ever you did the first day, when you came trembling into the Pulpit. If therefore we feel our selves full, so that the more we have received, the more sufficient we are; and go not about the duties

duties we have in hand, in fear and trembling, but  
 in self-confidence; if this be our usual, and constant  
 practise, it is but counterfeit Christianity: I do not  
 say, That the gifts are counterfeit, for they are from  
 the Spirit of God, and men may by them be very ser-  
 viceable to Church and Commonwealth: but this is  
 certain, that the stronger and the more your gifts are  
 if you sit loose from Christ, the emptier your hearts  
 are of him. But you will say, May not a Chri-  
 stian be sometimes full of himself, and depend upon  
 the strength of his own gifts? Yes, brethren, God  
 forbid I should deny that, for the best Christians have  
 gone astray in the exercise of their best gifts; and  
 hereupon *Abraham* hath been wanting in *faith*, and  
*Moses* in *meekness*, and *Peter* in *courage*, and *Sarah* in  
*her modesty*; they have been so apt to trust upon  
 those graces of God, wherein they have most a-  
 bounded, that they have principally failed therein:  
 but this you shall find, that if they have been over-  
 taken once, or twice, as the burnt child dreadeth  
 the fire; so they grow to be more sensible of their  
 need of Jesus Christ, more fearful of departing from  
 him, more careful to cleave unto him, that they  
 might grow up in his name to all well pleasing in  
 his sight. If therefore there be a sanctification that  
 standeth at a stay in any man, it is a great sus-  
 picion whether it flow from fellowship with Christ,  
 or no: if gifts be truly spiritual, a man shall ordi-  
 narily grow up in them. *Habenti dabitur*, Employ  
 them, and multiply them; but if you have received  
 gifts in your own strength, and you are now full  
 of your own sanctification, truly this is but froathy  
 work, and doth not convey true nor lively nourish-  
 ment and comfort: but to him that in his most spi-  
 ritual gifts is empty of himself, and only full of Jesus  
 Christ

Christ to live, or die, is his advantage. This is the use which I would commend unto you touching your Christian *Justification*. Thus we see sundry things have been clear'd from this Doctrine concerning the Covenant of Grace. There remaineth another thing to be resolved, and cleared from the Doctrine: For if God in the Covenant of his Grace, do give himself to be a God to *Abraham*, and his seed, it is then to be enquired, 1. How God the Father giveth himself. 2. How God the Son giveth himself. 3. How God the Holy Ghost giveth himself: For these are the Fundamentals of the Covenant of Grace, and necessary to be opened for clearing the Doctrine of it.

*Quest.* 1. How God the Father doth give himself, to be a God in Covenant to *Abraham*, and to his seed; that is, to the faithful seed of *Abraham*?

*Ans.* By a threefold work doth God the Father give himself, in the Covenant of his Grace, to be a God unto *Abraham*, and to his elect seed.

1. The first Act of God, is by Giving his own Son out of his bosom, for the redemption of *Abraham*, and his seed. That is the first and Fundamental of all the rest, that God doth put forth, or any other person in Trinity, for the applying of the Covenant unto the hearts of his people. And God in giving his Son doth give himself, *Joh. 9. 14.* and *10. 30.* He that hath seen me, hath seen the Father; and, I and my Father are one: if God giveth us his Son, he giveth us himself also: so saith the Apostle *John*, *1 Joh. 2. 23.* He that hath the Son hath the Father, and he that hath not the Son hath not the Father. Herein hath God commended his love towards us, that while we were yet sinners Christ died for us; *Rom. 5. 8.* this is



is the love of God to send us his Son, that whosoever believeth in him, might not perish but have everlasting life. Job 3. 16. As God giveth us his Son so he giveth us all things else in his Son, Rom. 8. 32. for, he that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things? So then this is the first and the great work of God, that he hath given his Son out of his own bosom; to take our nature upon him, to lead a miserable life, and to die a cursed death; and in him hath given all his attributes, his mercy, and power unto the sons of men; an undoubted sign that God intendeth to give himself in the Covenant of Grace unto his people, when he giveth Jesus Christ himself in that Covenant, as he doth say expressly, Isa. 42. 6. *I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee, and will give thee for a Covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles.* Wherein we may see, that God giveth another, even that God the Father giveth God the Son: thus it is a gift of the Covenant that the Lord giveth Christ to be the foundation of the Covenant, and the chief blessing of it; in chap. 49. 8. He speaketh to the same purpose, *In an acceptable time have I heard thee, and in a day of salvation have I helped thee, and will preserve thee, and give thee for a Covenant of the people, &c.* No man hath seen God at any time, Job. 1. 18. nor can see him, nor will God the Father have immediate fellowship with any creature, but the only begotten Son of the Father. The Lord hath given him that he might reveal him. Thus we may perceive that the Lord is gracious, and marvelous gracious, in that he giveth us his dear Son, the second person in Trinity; and thus he saith to his elect, *I will be a God unto thee, and give thee*

thee my Son, that shall redeem thee out of all distress,  
 and danger: This doth the Lord for his people,  
 and it is a clear evidence of his grace, and sheweth  
 that his love unto his people is beyond all banks, and  
 bottoms, for the Lord to give us his Son, and this  
 Son so soon as he was promised; nor the Lord only,  
 but his people saw him afar off, *Joh. 8. 5, 6.* *Thou*  
*father Abraham rejoiced to see my day, and he saw it*  
*and was glad.* For when the Lord Jesus Christ was  
 promised unto him, *Gen. 17. 16, 17.* and the Lord  
 said unto him, *I will bless Sarah, and give thee a*  
*son of her; yea, I will bless her, and she shall be a mother*  
*of many nations, kings of people shall be of her; then A-*  
*braham fell upon his face, and laughed; he did re-*  
*joyce that the Lord would give him a Saviour out of*  
*his loynes; how it could be brought to passe, it may*  
*be he knew not; but by a Spirit of Prophecie did*  
*he discern it much, no doubt.* This is the first work  
 of God in giving himself by Covenant; and this was  
 done long ago, before we were born: he gave him  
 in his eternal Counsel, when he did elect us in him;  
 he gave him when he sent him into the world: but  
 this is more, when he giveth *us* unto his Christ, by  
 Covenant, and draweth *us* unto him, and giveth  
 Christ unto *us* also; and this grace of God cometh  
 nearer unto us; the other did leave us like Lambs  
 in a large pasture: but now as he giveth *us* unto  
 Christ, so he giveth *him* to us, and both in present  
 possession; and this the Father doth, *Joh. 16. 44.*  
*For no man, saith Christ, can come unto me, except*  
*the Father, which hath sent me, draw him: and every*  
*one that hath heard and learned of the Father, cometh*  
*unto me.* Now this bearing, and learning of the Fa-  
 ther, is a strange kind of learning, which the Lord  
 teacheth the soul by, when he draweth him un-

to Christ; an effectual Teaching, and powerful,  
*1 Cor. 1. 9. God is faithful, by whom ye were called unto the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.* This is our effectual calling, and this is the Lords giving us unto his Son, *Joh. 6. 37. All that the Father giveth me, shall come unto me*: all this is properly the work of the Father. Men are said to be well given, when they give themselves to their Books, to their works, and business: but this we may well say, that we are indeed well given, when the Lord giveth us unto his Son: for otherwise we are but in an ill state, which way looves we are given.

*Ques.* If you shall ask how the Father giveth us, and calleth us, and draweth us to fellowship with his Son? (for they are Scripture-phrases, and all of them of like value in Scripture-sense.)

*Ans.* In a word! The Lord draweth us unto his Son by his Spirit, and calleth us as by his Word, so by his Spirit also, and giveth us by his Word and Spirit unto Jesus Christ. In this thing I shall speak no more unto you, then what you have often heard, and I suppose long ago received, as, that the Lord calleth his people out of their sins, by the light of the Law, and by the Spirit of *Bandage* he setteth home the Law effectually unto the soul, and thereby draweth us from sin, and from the world in some measure, that we have now no might to those things which before we were full of delight in: whether they be sins against the Law, or sins against the Gospel, it is the Lords usual dealing by his Spirit, to set home sins against both: Inasmuch that thereby we come to be afflicted with some kind of trembling and fear, and concern about our spiritual estate. And thus it was with *Saul*, (who afterwards was *Paul*) *1 Sa. 9. 3. 4. 5. 6.* when Jesus Christ called unto him



out of heaven: he all trembling, and astonished,  
 said, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? So it was  
 with the *Apostle*, *Act. 16. 29.* after the Lord had sha-  
 ken his heart with an earthquake, (which is a san-  
 ction of the Law, and a ratification of it) as all Gods  
 judgments are. He called for a light, and sprang in,  
 and came trembling to *Paul and Silas*. Thus the Lord  
 draweth men out of themselves, and their sinful  
 will, by a spirit of bondage, whereby they are  
 greatly and deeply afflicted with fear; concerning  
 which the *Apostle Paul* saith, *2 Tim. 1. 7.* God  
 hath not given us the spirit of fear, or bondage: but of  
 power, of love, and of a sound mind, &c. such fear  
 as the *Apostle John* speaketh of, *1 John 4. 18.*  
 which he saith, Perfect love casteth out fear, for fear  
 is torment; which cometh from the sense of a  
 weak state, whereby he is many times forced to cry  
 out, and to say, Wo worth my soul, that ever I  
 was born; for the Lord causeth me to possess all my  
 sins, and presseth me down to the nethermost hell:  
 this is one work of the spirit of bondage, by which  
 the Lord draweth the soul out of it self, and its sins,  
 though of it self the spirit of fear goeth no further  
 than to shake a mans carnal confidence; but there  
 is further act of the spirit of bondage, according  
 to that power which was given to the faithful wit-  
 nesses, *Revel. 19.* in which I saw a man bro. I saw  
 Besides this spirit of bondage, the Lord hath  
 another work, which is called a spirit of burning,  
 which is. The day cometh that shall burn as an oven,  
 and shall consume the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly shall  
 be stubble, and the day that cometh shall burn them up  
 as the Lord of hosts; and it shall leave them neither  
 root nor branch. This is a spirit of burning; let us  
 stand fast unto it a little. The Prophet saith, It shall  
 I 2 leave

leave them neither root nor branch. There are two things in the root.

1. First is the root of *Abraham's Covenant*, which this people much trusted upon; & that is it of which *John Baptist* speaketh, *Now the axe is laid to the root of the tree, &c.* and this he spake (*Mat. 3.9.*) after he had said, *Think not to say with your selves, We have Abraham to our father,* ver. 8. So that all the confidence that they had in *Abraham's Covenant*, and *Temple*, and *Tabernacle*, and such things, is burnt up; and so they have no root left them to stand upon. And this is one thing intended by the root. But

2. There is something more in it: for with the spirit of burning, the Lord by the power of his Spirit doth cut us off, from any power of our own natural gifts, or parts, and spiritual gifts also, where by we thought to lay hold on *Jesus Christ*; and we are cut off hereby from all that confidence that we have in our own sufficiency, when once the Lord intendeth to bring a soul unto himself; for there is an usual providence that we have of our own state, though the Lord have cut us off from hope in the righteousness of our parents, and from boasting in his Ordinances, yet we think there is some power still left us, and therefore we hope, and will feel that the Lord may reveal himself to us in mercy and peace; but when the Lord cometh nearer unto us, he will shew us how unable we are to take up the least good resolution: we shall be like bruised reeds, and not find our selves able to hold up our heads. For *Christ* came to seek and to save that which was lost. So that *Christ* will not seek us until we be lost, and therefore he saith, *Matth. 16. 24.* If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and follow me.

we; and according hereunto it is, that those converts, *Act. 2. 37.* do cry out, when they were pricked in their hearts, and said unto Peter, and to the rest of the Apostles, *Men, and brethren what shall we do?* Hence it is also, that the poor souls that came unto Christ, *Mat. 12. 20.* were like bruised reeds that could not hold up their heads; for the Lord in this case bruise them, and layeth them low, that they see no more hope of mercy, no likelihood that God should shew them any hope. Thus doth the Lord burn up the root of *Abraham's Covenant* wherein men trust, and the root of all our *self-sufficiency*; that now we find our selves dried up, and our strength consumed; that now we are not able to think, as of our selves, a good thought.

And again, The Lord by this spirit of *burning*, doth burn up all our branches also, how fair and green soever they have been; all our *fastings*, and *humiliations*, and *alms-deeds*, and *prayers*; such things as the Pharisees much boasted in, *Mat. 6. 1, 2, 3, &c.* but these things are all burnt up. This is a spirit of *bondage*, partly as it worketh a *trembling* and *fear*, and partly as it worketh to the burning up of all the *hope* that we have in our selves. There is a spirit of *bondage*, I confess, that only worketh *fear*, and now all the hope is, that a man setteth upon reformation: but if the Lord love a mans soul, he will not let him stay there; but goeth further with him, and sheweth him that his prayers and fastings are all empty, and fall short of the life and power of Jesus Christ. I, but yet, the soul is not quite out of hope, though the *Law* cannot save me; if it cannot, I must get me to Jesus Christ, and lay hold upon him for salvation: as if all were to be had by faith in Jesus Christ, if once he can lay hold upon him, and nothing else were required.



quired but faith in Jesus Christ, and my laying hold upon him. I see plainly (saith a man in this case) that there is no hope in me, as hath been rightly observed; and therefore he trusteth upon Jesus Christ, and giveth himself to Jesus Christ: but now if the Lord love thy soul, he will not suffer thee there to rest, the spirit of *burning* will not leave thee so. How comest thou by faith in Jesus Christ? Why? Thou tookest it up of thy own accord, thou thoughtest, all thy gifts and duties were in vain, and therefore now thou wilt believe in Jesus Christ; Is it so easie a matter? Can any man come unto Christ, except the Father draw him? And is thy faith any more then a resolution of thine own, when thou wast convinced of the emptiness of thine own gifts and abilities? When this spirit of *burning* hath blasted this thy faith also, and that by the clear evidence of the Gospel put upon it; now, saith the soul, I see that I am not in Christ: though I said, I would trust in Christ; yet I see it is *not everyone that saith, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven*: now I see it is not my faith that will reach Jesus Christ, it is not a faith of my own undertaking that will serve the turn; I see now Christ alone must work this great work in me, and Christ in the way of his own Ordinances; therefore I must look for it in his word, and in the fellowship of the Sacraments; therefore I will look up unto the Lord in all these, and wait for him, and seek him therein. And so the poor soul maketh account, that in time he shall find Jesus Christ in the Ordinances, and so hammereth out a faith from thence, and therein blesteth himself. Now (mind you) the Spirit of God (when the Lord God the Father will draw home the soul throughly to Jesus Christ) will *burn up all thy confidence*: for if thy

can be not utterly lost: so long as it hath any root, or power in it self: though I cannot work, I will believe; and if I cannot believe, I will wait that I may believe: and so here is still the old root of *Adam* left alive in us, whereby men seek to establish their own righteousness, whereof the Apostle *Paul* often maketh mention: This old root putteth forth it self, and will not suffer the soul to be wholly for Christ, and for Christ alone; and all because there is a spring of *Adam* still in the soul: whence it is that the soul is marvelous apt to have hope and confidence more or less from some virtue or power in himself; therefore it is no small matter to be cut off from *Adam*, that's contrary to nature (*Rom. 11. 14.*) as saith the Apostle: For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree, which is wild by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good olive tree; this is marvelous strong work; when the Spirit of God cometh to do contrary things to nature: for nature is fully possessed, that what God commandeth, I am able to do it: nature will not be perswaded to the contrary: If I hear God command any thing, I will do it, (saith a carnal heart) and if I cannot do it, I will believe; and if I cannot believe, I will wait that I may believe: this is still but nature. Now when the Lord cometh indeed to engraft us into Jesus Christ, this is quite contrary to nature. Why wherein is it so contrary to nature? I answer: whereas nature is active for it self, now it cometh to pass, that whereas a soul hath been stirring and busy in his own strength, at length the Spirit of God by the mighty power of his Grace, being shed abroad into the soul, doth burn up root and branch, not only the root of *Abraham's Covenant*, but all the fatness of the root of the wild Olive, by which we

we are fat, and lively to spiritual work, in our apprehensions; so that we work in our own strength, untill the Lord come, and cut us quite down, and make us to see, that there is not in us the least good thought, as of our selves; and therefore unless the Lord be wonderfully gracious to us, we cannot be saved: till it come unto this, the soul is not fit for Jesus Christ. Thus the Spirit of God may work powerfully in the hearts of men, and burn up their root and branch: and this a spirit of burning may do; and yet leave the soul in a damnable condition, for ought I know; and such as many a soul may be in, and yet never come to enjoy saving fellowship with Jesus Christ. Therefore as this is one arm of God stretched forth for the salvation of his people, when he draweth them home to Jesus Christ: so

2. Secondly, there is a further work of God, when he giveth the spirit of *adoption*, which reacheth beyond all the former work: he hath cut us off from our selves, and now we stand in a state quite contrary to nature; and if any saving work be wrought in us, it is quite contrary to nature; if any thing fall upon the heart and soul of a man, to bring his will to this pass, to lie down at Gods feet, that he knoweth not what to do; and yet whatsoever the Lord calleth him unto, he is willing if it were possible to be done; he would run through fire and water to do it: but he findeth himself unable to do any thing; and now he will tell you, that to believe is as impossible for him, as to build a world. Why then bid him wait: wait? saith he; I but I cannot wait; and if I seek the Lord, I cannot find him: and I see others of the servants of God wrought upon graciously; but  
dead



dead hearted I, nothing will work upon me. Now in such a case as this, the Spirit of adoption cometh into the heart of a Christian, and taketh possession of the soul for Jesus Christ, and so draweth the soul unto Jesus Christ, and maketh it there to stay, and there to lie down, and to be willing to be drawn yet nearer and nearer to Jesus Christ, and to be carried an end by him, to take all from him, and to give all the glory to him. This Spirit of *Adoption* doth give a man a son-like frame; to lie prostrate at his Fathers will: like unto the Prodigal son, *Luke* 15. 17, 18, 19. who when he came unto himself, and saw how unable he was to provide for himself, and how unworthy he was that his father should do any thing for him; he came and lay down as it were at the feet of his father; for he is unable, and unworthy of any mercy: now this stooping of the heart unto God and yielding unto him to do with us as seemeth good in his own eyes, is such a prostration of the heart wherein the Lord hath taken possession of the soul, that now a man is led unto fellowship with Jesus Christ, that there is none in heaven but him, none in the earth in comparison of him, that the soul desireth after: and now a man waiteth upon Christ, to see what he will do for him; and though he cannot tell you that he waiteth, yet he doth wait that he may be helped of God to depend upon him: thus he receiveth all from Christ, and giveth all unto Christ. This is the Fathers drawing of the soul, which is expounded to be the hearing and learning of the Father, of which *John* speaketh. *chap. 6. 45. He that hath heard and learned of the Father, cometh unto me;* which is, when the Lord hath drawn the soul out of his natural corruptions, legal reformations, pretences

tences of faith, and waiting upon Christ in his own strength for faith if it be wanting: then when the soul doth lie at his feet to be disposed of according to the will of God, and is in some measure subject unto the Lord, though not so much as he could be desirous he were; and therefore now the soul doth not content and bless himself in his faith, nor any other gifts or works of his own; but yieldeth himself humbly unto the Lord, to work in him both will and deed, of his own good pleasure, and to teach him how to seek and wait, and believe, and long after Jesus Christ, these things he waiteth for; otherwise, until he be thus taught of God, the soul will alway think that he can do something, & is not able to come out of himself, to an utter denial of himself: but if any man will come unto Christ, he must deny himself, even all his own gifts, and parts, and good works whatsoever: for a man is never utterly denied, until there be nothing left of which a man can say, This I am able to do, or this is an excellent thing in me; and when it cometh unto this pass, then will the soul lie down at the will of God, and acknowledge that if the Lord would never shew him mercy, just and righteous are his judgments. Now when the soul and will of a Christian are convinced of these things, as well as his judgment, that now he waiteth upon Christ, as well that he may be able to wait, and seek the Lord, as he doth for any other good thing from the Lord; he waiteth now upon the Lord for a poor spirit, and cannot perk up himself, as a bruised reed cannot do. Thus when it cometh unto saving-work, the will and soul of a man is so cast down, that a man cannot tell what to make of himself; but there he lieth, to see what the Lord will do with him; whether he will reach forth the hand

hand of salvation unto him. In this case the soul is left utterly void, and hath in himself neither root nor branch; but seeth how unable he is to believe, or wait: nor can he tell whether Jesus Christ be his portion: and now doth the Lord take possession, and fill the empty soul. If you shall ask me how this *spirit* cometh into the soul, to make it thus to stoop unto Jesus Christ? You shall find that the Lord useth to convey himself unto the soul in some word of promise of the Gospel, that sheweth unto the soul the riches of the grace of God in Jesus Christ: something or other is declared of Jesus Christ: This word being taught in the public Ministry of the Word, or brought to remembrance in some spiritual duty, as prayer, or conference, or the like (for I will not limit the holy One of Israel, yet) usually it is done in the Ministry of the Gospel; and though the Lord doth not limit himself, yet he doth limit us to attend upon the means, which he usually worketh by: but whatsoever the way be, this is the manner of Gods working, he doth universally come into the soul, in some word or other of his grace: as for instance, that in 2 Cor. 5. 19. *God was in Christ reconciling the world unto himself*; or that in 1 Tim. 1. 15. *Jesus Christ came into the world to save sinners, of which I am chief*. In some such word of Gods grace, he cometh and putteth life into the soul, and maketh it somewhat quiet, and causeth it to see that there is hope in Israel; and the Lord is able to save me, and there is riches enough in Jesus Christ to save me. By such kind of work it is, that the Lord bringeth the souls of his servants effectually to Jesus Christ. And now hath God the Father given us unto Jesus Christ: and until now, thou never camest



most home savingly. This is the second act whereby God the Father giveth *himself* unto the soul.

3. The third *Act* or work of God the Father which followeth both these: So soon as ever the Lord hath given this *self-denying spirit* unto the soul, & hath made it like unto a bruise dreed, or like a Traveller that is out of his way, & willing to take any man by the hand that will lead him into his way again; when the soul is in such a frame, now God the Father cometh by a third work of actual *reconciliation*: The first work, was of *conviction*: The second, was a work of *subjection*: And the third, of *reconciliation*. This is the third work of the Father: though there is in all these works a concurrence of the whole Trinity, yet some are more proper unto each person, as our *Catechisms* teach us, and we are not wont to scruple such expressions in them. God the Father created us; and we cannot expound it, but as God the Father created us at the first, so he doth again create you, or else if we acknowledge it in the one, and not in the other, we do God the Father wrong. Well, he is then reconciled unto us, having given us the Spirit of his Son, and now he doth pronounce us reconciled unto him: this is the work which is spoken of, *Rom. 5. 10. When we were enemies, we were reconciled unto God, by the death of his Son.* And this is the work of God the Father, according to that which is before alledged, *2 Cor. 5. 19. God was in Christ reconciling the world, &c.* now there are two acts of God, as fruits that follow hereupon, and both of them done at once upon the soul.

1. Act of God is *Adoption*, whereby he maketh us his Children; as *Eph. 1. 4, 5, 6. When the fulness of time was come, God sent forth his Son made of a*  
*roman,*

man, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law: that we might receive the adoption of sons: and because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. And as many as received him, to them he gave power to become the sons of God, Joh. 1. 12. So that now we are brethren of Christ, and the sons of the eternal God. Adoption is properly the work of the Father: but Jesus Christ being the natural Son of God, we must be knit unto him, before we can be accounted sons.

2. Act of God is Justification, It is God that justifieth, who is he that condemneth? Rom. 8. 33, 34. This is the Father's work, and it is principally attributed unto him to forgive our iniquities, and to reconcile us in Jesus Christ. And look as it is in our natural being: so soon as ever we have received natural life from Adam, we become the sons of Adam, and his sin is imputed unto us: so it is in the new birth: so soon as ever the life of Christ is shed abroad into our hearts, so soon are we heirs with Christ, and the righteousness of the second Adam is imputed unto us now to our justification, as was the sin of Adam before to our condemnation.

Use 1. The Doctrine it self is but an Use. But I desire that we may all of us apply it unto our selves. It will be helpful unto us for our instruction: to teach us how we came to saving fellowship with God in Jesus Christ, and wherein lieth our spiritual union with Jesus Christ, and how it is wrought and obtained: and this is necessary: for as it hath been observed by others, so we may now gather it from what we have heard, that there be four sorts of men, that fall short of this union with Jesus Christ.

I. You

1. You have some that bless themselves in their natural state; it may be they are rich, and honourable among men; well, they bless themselves in that state, and will never go any further.

2. There is another sort, that are convinced of the danger of their natural estate; they dare not rest there, and hereupon they fall to reformation, and so to duties of humiliation, and the like; wherein they find such a blessed change, and so much comfort, as doth satisfy them: and indeed the Lord doth comfort men in their reformations; for God will have no man lose by him, Isaiah 6. 2, 5. Hypocrites have their reward for their sins; and for their prayers, blessed when he heard John, reformed many things, and heard him gladly. Mark 6. 30. here was a great change, and doubtless much comfort: yet these men never had the work of God the Father, to burn up all that they have received by any strength of their own.

3. A third sort go a step beyond these: They have been convinced, that they went forth to reformation in their own strength; they plainly see it, and discern it; and therefore they know that it is impossible to be saved by the righteousness of the Law, and that it is not of works neither, of one kind, nor of another. They are convinced, that faith only must do the deed, and upon this ground they will take up faith to believe in Jesus Christ for salvation; and that faith which formerly they have pitched upon their good duties, they will now pitch it upon Jesus Christ: but still it is the same faith, for the root is not yet broken up, their old corruption still remaineth in them: and so here is your old faith translated from one object to another; it was fastened before upon duties and re-

mations,



man, and now upon *Jesus Christ*: And now a man is ready to plead, and say, If God had not loved me, he would never have set me upon such re-formations, nor have enlarged me with such comforts as he hath done, if he had not been well pleased with me in *Jesus Christ*: but though he may be sometimes burnt up touching his hope in reformation, yet he will translate his faith to *Jesus Christ*: but how came you to do that, brother? Why, I saw my hopes in my own reformation would not serve my turn, and therefore I believed in *Jesus Christ*; and now shall nothing draw me from *Jesus Christ*, nor pull me from my confidence: for I have built upon some word of God, and some promise of his unto such reformation as I have set upon; and is not this true faith in *Jesus Christ*? This is far from true faith, it is no other but a strong fallacy whereby the Devil doth cheat men; and in truth, this faith is but a faith of a mans own making, that I may so speak; it is no more but a spirit of *burning* at the best, that hath burnt up his confidence in his own works, and taught him to resolve to believe on *Jesus Christ*.

4 There are a fourth sort, that fall far short of *Jesus Christ* also, and yet go beyond all these: they go beyond *works*, and beyond this faith also which we have spoken of, which was not a lively faith in *Jesus Christ*, whereby we are justified; but men justify themselves by it, God doth not justify them: now this fourth sort come plainly to see that their faith is shaken, and they dare not look God in the face, to justify the truth of their faith before him: It is true, many an heavenly spirited man cannot tell what will become of him, nor can he

he tell whether his faith be sound : but many an hypocrite also is so far convinced, that he cannot tell what will become of him, nor can he say that his faith is right, nor that he is able to believe : what saith the soul now in such a case as this ? He will say, I see it is not my *reformation*, nor my *faith*, that will serve the turn : what is it then ? I see that now I must *wait* upon Christ that I may believe, and unto him must I *seek* for help. Is not this soul in a state of everlasting fellowship with Jesus Christ ? Truly this is that which the Lord many times bringeth the souls of his servants unto, but he leaveth them not here, if he mean to do them good. For I would examine again, how canst thou to wait upon Jesus Christ ? Thou hast been driven out of conceit of thy former faith, and thou hast been forced, and hast seen a necessity to wait upon Jesus Christ for faith, or else thou canst not believe : force of argument hath constrained thee thus far. If thou hast taken up a course of waiting only upon this ground, here is a spark of *old Adam* still kept alive in thee : thou art *able* to seek, and wait upon Jesus Christ, and yet I cannot promise thee that thou hast any part or portion in him. But a soul will say, Hath not the Lord made gracious promises to all those that seek for him ? Hath he not said, that *all they are blessed that wait for him* ? *Isa. 30. 18.* and am not I wrapped up hereby in a bundle of grace and peace ? Mind you ; there is no promise of life made to such as wait and seek in their *own strength*, who being driven unto it, have taken it up by their own resolutions ; though I grant it is true, that every one that waiteth for, and seeketh the Lord aright, is driven unto it by the Lord : but if ever the Lord

mean

mean to save you, he will rend as it were the caul from the heart, I mean, he will pluck away all the confidence that you have built upon, as a man would rend the entrails of a beast from him: so the Lord will bring you to a flat denial of your selves, and that you have neither good will nor deed as of your selves; and you know not what God will do with you; but this you know, that whatsoever he doth, he is most righteous. When the Spirit of God cometh as a *Comforter*, he will not in this manner convince the soul of a man, that he hath heretofore hung upon his *reformations* for hope and comfort; but now he is brought plainly to see, and flatly to deny, that he had not so much as one drop of the fatness of the true Olive in him, when he most trusted unto his own excellencies. Now a man being thus far brought on, doth not only deny himself in his *Judgment*, but in his *will*, and is ready to say as *David* sometimes did; *If the Lord say, be hath pleasure in me, here I am, let him do unto me as seemeth him good*; the Lord is righteous in all that cometh upon me: this only the soul hath for his support in such a case, the Lord is able to do all for me that stand in need of: If he shew me no mercy, he is just; if he be gracious, I shall live to praise him. Now when a mans *will* is thus subdued, that he hath no *will* of his own to be guided by, but the will of God, this is true *brokenness* of heart, when not only the *Judgment*, but the *heart* and *will* is broken. The soul being thus convinced that neither his *working*, nor *believing*, nor *waiting*, nor *seeking* of himself will do him any good, there is no merit that he can challenge for any goodness of his own; then cometh the Holy Ghost in some declaration of Gods free Love, and taketh possession of the heart,



and then the soul beginneth to pant after *Iesus Christ*, and nothing in heaven but him, nor in the earth besides him: The soul being thus wrought upon, beginneth to put forth it self towards the Lord *Iesus*; but the Holy Ghost had taken possession before, and so helpeth our infirmities, *Rom. 8. 26. 27.* he alone must help us, and no other: observe it. I pray you, for it is most necessary to know it to be impossible, that a *conditional promise* should save the soul. A man is convinced that there is no condition will quiet his spirit until the grace of God in *Christ* be manifested to him. This is the first Use.

The second Use may give light touching a controversy, if it be stirring in the Country, I know not whether it be, I fear it is, and yet hope that matters were rightly understood, there would be no material difference: for if the Question be not about *grace*, but about the *discerning* of grace, you will find that differences which stand unto the discerning of grace, will be of much less dangerous consequence then the other; for thereupon lieth the very foundation of a Christian mans safe estate. How far there is difference in the Country, I cannot give an account; but I desire that you may all understand what I say.

*Quest.* If you demand, upon what ground cometh the soul to close with *Christ* aright; whether upon a *conditional*, or upon an *absolute promise*. And are they not both free?

*Ans.* I Answer, It is true, they are both free but when God is said to do any thing to a work, to apply a promise to a work, it is not so properly said, be a promise of grace; but I will not enter into Dispute: This you will find to be true; the

like a soul that is in union with Christ, and apply  
all the Promises to him; he will make you this an-  
swer, before the Spirit of Grace cometh into him,  
he is clear in this, that there are none of all the Pro-  
mises of God belonging unto him, till the Lord who  
hath broken him do bind him up again; for his  
heart will tell you that his duties and reformati-  
ons have been such, as have kept him from Christ. You  
will say, I hope you trust upon Christ: I will he  
say, with that faith by which I trusted upon works  
before. If you tell him of promises made to faith,  
he will say, But not to mine, that hath only sprung  
from my own reformati-  
ons. Consider, all you that  
hearken the word of God this day, when the soul  
dareth to deny that it hath true faith, what pro-  
mise can it apply unto that which it denieth it self  
to have? A soul will be ready to refuse promises,  
even when the Spirit of God hath taken possession;  
yet then it is his sin: yet all the time before, there  
was no reason but that the soul should refuse to apply  
promises, when there was nothing but a power of  
the Spirit of Reformation, and till we be cut off  
from the old Adam, we shall be ready to quarrel and  
chafe that the Lord should deal thus with us; and  
why did he suffer Adam to fall? and put upon us  
such a Law to obey, and then condemn us for that  
which we were never able to perform? Truly there  
is nothing to help in this case; but the Lord will  
take away thy crabbed spirit, he will make thee to  
lie flat at his feet, and to say, If he will kill me, here I  
am; and if he will save thee, he will make thee con-  
tent to receive all from Christ; and to be willing  
that he should do with thee that which is good in  
his own eyes. And what can help a soul now, but only  
an absolute promise? Whereby the soul is raised to

look to the Name of that Christ, whom he hath all this while blasphemed and persecuted. Thus we see upon what terms and grounds any one is jealous of building his comfort upon *conditional promises*, and why we are so loath to say, that *sanctification* is an evidence of a mans *justification*; it is because men may produce sanctification, and promises unto it which it is but legal righteousness. Yet some men will say, I have been driven out of my own legal righteousness, and now I rest upon Jesus Christ, and may not take comfort in such faith, and sanctification flowing therefrom? I confesse faith in Christ, and sanctification flowing from it, are precious treasures but how comest thou by them? If thou knowest how, I cannot but think that thou stolest them; thou comest not by them in the right way: you will say, Well, though I have no righteousness, nor faith of my own, yet I can wait upon Christ: How comest thou by power to wait upon Christ. Here is a brand of the *old Adam* still springing forth afresh; thou art confident in thine own strength, and worth; as if God dealt otherwise with thee then thou expectest; thou wilt be apt to wrangle with the Lord, far wilt thou be from stooping to his will. Search the Scriptures, and see if it be not the truth of God. See whether it be thy qualifications taken up upon unjust grounds, that will save thy soul; thou hast not been drawn far enough all this while: if thou sayest thou hast been drawn to *reformation*, and *waiting*; If thou hast been indeed drawn, it is a comfortable sign; but truly the Promises do not belong unto thee, until thou art brought unto a *denial* of thy self; and thy will be made to lie prostrate before the will of God, and is unable to resist in any thing besides *Jesus Christ*; the way



of either of which, will leave a man still a member of old Adam; that either he will cavil with God, or else will go away, and be jolly, and frolick, and merry of Spirit, though he knoweth not what the Lord will do for him: which is a plain sign that the Spirit of God is not there, and then there is no condition of which it can be said, This is the spot of Gods children. This is the seal of the servants of the living God. If then the Spirit of God come upon the wings of a promise, it is an *absolute promise*; and then you must not wonder, if we be thus afraid that men should build their faith upon *conditional promises*: if men build their consolation upon conditions of obedience, hypocrites have gone beyond it: if you have trusted in your own faith, hypocrites will brag that they have gone beyond that also; for they have waited upon God that they might believe. And therefore see the reason why we do so much mistrust the building of our faith upon promises made unto conditions in us. And I have given you the grounds from the word of God: for I should be a Traitor to the Lord Jesus, if I should speak from any other grounds. And though it be true (which I have formerly said) that the fruits of the Spirit of grace in the heart of a Christian, as *Faith*, and *Patience*, and *Love*, cannot be denied to be evidences of a good estate; yet let it first appear from whence they come: they draw neer unto God in Jesus Christ, and when they are brought on to Christ by self-denial, such as faith and love are indeed evident tokens of salvation and communion with Christ; but until men are thus brought on, they can have no Evidence from such graces. Therefore you see why we are so careful to build our faith upon *qualifications*; for every self-denying soul will tell you, that no promise

mise will serve his turn to build his faith upon, but some such as speaks of Gods wonderful and free grace : if there be any promise made unto faith, he will find himself very unable to apply it, until the Lord by some word of his free grace hath wrought faith in him.

Use 3. You may see here the unsafeness of any such building ; as when we are convinced of our sins, then we seek for some qualification in ourselves, and think that the Holy Ghost applieth some promise made to such a qualification ; and so we lay hold upon Jesus Christ : a most unsafe building, in my understandings ; for we cannot reach any gracious qualification, until we have first received *Christ* in the Promise ; and then we must look up unto him to bring us unto the promises, and to apply them to us. It is not possible that a corrupt tree should bring forth good fruit : but first make the tree good, and good trees we cannot be, till we be ingrafted into *Christ* : which is indeed the ground of my great fear, and solicitude, and the reason why I dare not be so unfaithful, as to set men in a way of faith, or any other qualifications, thereby to conclude their safe estate, before they have received *Christ* in a promise. Indeed, when a mans soul is wounded, and convinced of some hainous sins, the Promises of God in such a case may support his soul ; but do not lead a man in such a case to see his faith, or any other qualification, therein to satisfy himself : but if I would help and comfort such a soul, I would declare to him what the Lord hath done for us in *Christ* : I would shew him all the treasures of the rich grace of *Christ* ; I would set in order before him, how he loveth freely without any deserts in us : I would tell him how freely the Lord Jesus Christ doth

vite men to come to him, that have neither money, nor moneys worth: and if the Lord take delight to do him good, and to do him good by my mouth; he will convey his Spirit of grace in some such word as I have spoken unto him; but if the Lord do not breath by his Spirit in my words, then I would advise him to go and talk with some other Christians, I would not limit him to any one brother; but let others also tell him, what Christ hath done for their souls; it may be the Lord may thereby convey himself; and I have sometimes known this in experience, that when some have spoken scornfully of the free grace of God, yet when the same hath been held forth, their spirits have been subdued to stoop unto it; so great is the power of the word of Gods free grace, set home by the Spirit of God; and the meditation thereof doth serve greatly to the firm rooting of the peace of Gods people.

*Use 4.* The fourth Use, is to such a soul who is brought home to fellowship with *Jesus Christ*, and actually justified; being first adopted, he is reconciled to God, and is become the son of the most High, and hath all his sins pardoned, both past, present and to come. It is a ground of much Consolation to such a soul who hath the Holy Ghost dwelling in him, he cannot rest till he find the free grace of *Jesus Christ* revealed to him by his holy Spirit, in some promise thereof; for Christ himself hath said, *That the Spirit of truth will take of mine, and shew it unto you, Joh. 16. 14.* There is strong consolation laid up for all those that cannot rest without the manifestation of the free grace of God unto their souls: other things will not satisfy them; the Lord doubtless will withhold no good thing from such.

*Quest.*



9 *Quest.* We now proceed unto the ninth Question, which is, How doth God the Son give himself unto Abraham, and to his seed, in an everlasting Covenant and union that shall never be dissolved?

*Ans.* In three acts or works about Abraham and his seed.

1. First, in giving Christ, God doth give himself; and therefore here is the Son's work, to come, and take our nature upon him: For the Father gave him for that end, and the Son came to fulfil the will of the Father; and that is the Son's work, even the true distinct work of Christ. It properly belongeth unto the Son, to be our actual Redeemer from all sin and misery.

2. As the Father draws us to the Son, and reveals the Son unto the soul; so doth the Son reveal the Father also: *Job. 1. 18. Mat. 11. 27.*

3. As the Father doth accept us in his Son, as justified by his righteousness, so the Son doth preserve us in this estate, even to his heavenly Kingdom. These therefore are the three works of the Son in the Covenant of Grace.

He takes our nature upon him for our redemption.

He reveals the Father to us.

He preserveth us in the Father and in himself. Let us speak something to each of these in particular.

1. For the first of these, That he took our nature upon him; the Apostle saith, *Heb. 2. 14, &c.* For as much as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself took part of the same, that through death he might destroy him who had the power of death, that is the devil, and deliver them who through fear

of him were made slaves. These are remarkable expressions in this text, signifying our salvation, and

of death, were all their life time subject to bondage, &c. Therefore it was truly said, Isa. 9. 6. unto us a child is born, unto us a Son is given, &c. He took our nature upon him, lived a miserable life, died a cursed death; this is the proper character, and work of the Son; and thus he is made an horn of salvation to us, Luk. 1. 69. and all this floweth from the everlasting Covenant, as also Zachariah Prophesied, Luk. 1. 72, 73. To perform the mercies promised to our fathers, and to remember his holy Covenant, the oath which he swore to our father Abraham: By him we have redemption through his blood, Eph. 1. 7. Col. 1. 14. He gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purifie unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. Tit. 2. 14. This then is the first work of the Son, to Redeem us; And the very phrase of Redemption doth imply a double state of those that are redeemed, without which it cannot be understood, to wit, *marked. mercies. promised man.*

The state } whence  
and } they are redeemed, *solemnly*  
whereunto } *& sacred oath. & promise*  
*must needs be first* } *i. e. certain. irrevocable*

Even from a state of bondage, unto Christian liberty; this is found in all redemption properly so called: It findeth us in bondage, and setteth us in a state of liberty, Heb. 2. 14, 15. He took our nature upon him, that he might deliver them, who through fear of death were all their life time made subject to bondage. And this third thing also is implied (in the word Redemption) with both the former, namely, a certain price by which we are redeemed from bondage unto liberty. In a state of Bondage we were under the Law and curse of God, but Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, Gal. 3. 13. and now sin shall no more be reckoned & springing up in, while more we are one with our own flesh.

*whereby it is that we are redeemed, & delivered from bondage, & set free, & made one with our own flesh.*

more have dominion over us, for we are not under the Law, Rom. 6. 14. that is, not under the Covenant of the Law, though we lie under the Commandment of it in Christ: we were sometime under the bondage of sin, under the guilt and strength of sin; but by Christ we have redemption, even the forgiveness of our sin: and as the Law was the strength of sin; so sin was the strength and sting of death, 1 Cor. 15. 5. but now, O death where is thy sting! O grave, where is thy victory! the Lord hath delivered us from him that hath the power of death, Col. 2. 15. Heb. 2. 14. and from this evil world: Gal. 1. 4. and from the wrath to come, 1 Thel. 1. 10. so then this was bondage we sometimes lay under, when the Law of God pressed heavily upon us the conscience of sin even unto death: both first, and second death; and both Law, and sin, and death delivered us unto the power of Satan, and held us under the wrath of God; the world turned to be our enemy in all the blessings and crosses of it: from all these bondages Christ hath redeemed us; and it is a marvelous work in the eyes of all that enjoy the benefit of it.

If you shall ask, what Ransom the Lord did pay, that we might be redeemed?

The answer is given in 1 Tim. 2. 5, 6. There is one Mediator between God and man, the Man Christ Jesus, who gave himself a ransom for all, &c. so that he himself is the Ransom. I will not stand disputing whether he gave his active, or passive obedience, or both; The Text is large, He gave himself, from the height of glory to become a mortal man, not sinful, but by temptation; so that from first to last he gave himself. Consider him therefore from his first taking that ransom upon him, and, all is but one



1. The first of these is the fact that the system is not a function of the input, but of the output. This is a very important feature of the system, and it is one that is not shared by most other systems.

above

above all, when as he came to wrestle with the wrath of his Father, he did therein exceed all the rest of his sufferings: It was much indeed for the Son of God to make himself a *servant*; but when he that is the Son of the eternal God, and in regard of his God-head equal with the Father, shall now stand to wrestle with the unsupportable wrath of God, and to cry out, My soul is in an agony unto the very death, and through anguish thereof to sweat drops of blood; and though his heart as it were seems to recoil, so that if it were possible he desires the cup might pass from him, yet he is carried before Pontius Pilate, and is there condemned, and afterward suffereth the death of the Cross: this was the chiefest part of the ransom, which the Lord did intend to pay to the justice of his Father; wherein he did also undergo the very pangs of Hell for our sins, and so gave himself a Ransom for us. And had not all this been, we should never have been redeemed from the terrors of the Law. Thus therefore did the Lord give himself, in taking our nature upon him, and giving himself unto a state of bondage, from a state of liberty, to redeem us unto liberty from a state of bondage under the curse of the Law of God, even unto liberty from sin, and death, and Satan, and this World, and from the indignation of the most High: A wonderful deliverance!

But as it is in all other liberties; so this Christian liberty doth stand in two things: First, As in removing some *bondage* and *burdens*: Secondly, As it carrieth with it some such *privilege* and *exemption* as whereby we claim some liberties which others cannot reach unto: and these the Lord Jesus hath dearly paid for, by suffer-





or the work of some enemy to deceive him: though he all this while seeth his need of Christ, and hath none in heaven but him, none in earth in comparison of him, of the want of whom he is sensible, yet the soul knows not whether all this humiliation which is wrought in him, come from the wrath or mercy of God, and whether God hath not in all this, given him only a taste of the very torments of Hell, and the pledge of them, to his everlasting perdition.

Thus may the poor soul be affraid; notwithstanding all this gracious work wrought in him, above all the power of the creature: though the Lord hath not said much of it unto him, yet he hath done it? and happy we that ever the Lord hath owned us so far.

Now here is the special work of the Son, he doth bring us back again to the Father, and reveals what the Father hath done unto us, even his rich grace that hath taken all this pains with us, for as no man knoweth the Son, but the Father, so neither doth any man know the Father, but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him, John. 1. 12. So that the Lord Jesus doth enlighten the soul, by the anointing of his blessed Spirit, so far what he hath done for him in mercy, which heretofore he thought was done in wrath: whence the soul begins to love the Father, for even the goodness of a God in what hath befallen, opens him out, beyond what he could have asked, or thought for; And therefore now begins with some more hope, and liberty to call God Father: for from this work of the Son, there doth arise the two characters of a Son in the soul, both which are comprized in this one, that is liberty: and there is a double liberty wherein a son

doth stand: 1. First, He hath *ease* from all his doubtful *fears*, or at least from a great part of the burden of them; some *refoculations*, some kind of *quietness* falleth upon the heart of a wearied sinner, whence the heart is ealed beyond his thoughts; although as yet his comfort stands rather in expectation, then in actual fruition; as our Saviour saith, *Come unto me all you that are weary, and heavy laden, and I will give you rest*, Mat. II. 28, 29. He doth not promise *sudden rest*: He will give you *present ease*; but learn of me, for I am meek and lowly, and you shall find rest unto your souls. The Lord will give rest unto the souls of his people; at the present he gives them ease, and an expectation of much more plentiful fruition of rest and peace, which they have begun to taste of.

And how doth the Lord ease the soul in such a case, so as that they feel the burden a great deal lighter? How doth the Son quiet and still, and refresh the soul? Is it by the sight of his own hungering and thirsting after righteousness?

What saith the Lord in such a case? Or how doth he satisfy the soul? He telleth us plainly where our satisfaction is, *Joh. 7. 37, 38, 39. If any man thirst, let him come unto me and drink*: So that if a man thirst, how shall he satisfy himself in his thirsting? This is the main question in many a soul: May I not draw consolation out of this, that I do thirst after the Lord Jesus?

You shall find, that the Lord doth not bid me go satisfy my self by seeing my thirst: If a man shall say, I am exceeding thirsty, and I shall tell him that he is a man of a healthful constitution, because a man in a Frenzy is thirsty, and knows it not; this will not satisfy his thirst.

How

How therefore comes the soul to be freed of his burdens? He thirsteth after Christ, and none of all the creatures can quench his thirst; therefore our Saviour proclaims this in the last and great day of the Feast, when most of the Jewes were present (for this Feast lasted eight days) If any man be now athirst, and not satisfied with all the Ordinances they had now enjoyed: he doth not send them back again, nor doth he bid them satisfie themselves with their own thirstings; neither doth he tell them that their blessedness lyeth in that they do thirst (though there be a blessedness in it) but how then shall they be satisfied? Let him come to me and drink.

So that this is the *Christian liberty*, which the Lord brings us unto; when he works in us unquenchable desires after Christ: if you would comfort a soul, and tell him you do thirst after Christ: and that you could not have done if Christ had not wrought in your soul; you say true, and there may be more in such a soul than he is aware of; yet Christ is not wont to leave the soul to quench his thirst with his thirst: but you will say, Is not hungering and thirsting a sign of health? For a surfeited body doth not hunger: true: yet the Lord doth not direct the soul to content himself with his own act; but, Come unto me. But will the Lord Jesus give him drink? He promisseth that he will; Let him come to me and drink. And he saith moreover, He that beleeveth on me, out of his belly shall flow rivers of water of life. This be spake of the Spirit, which they that beleeve on him should receive; for the Holy Ghost was not yet given, because that Jesus was not yet glorified: so as that which now the Son doth, is not the proper characteristical work of the Spirit; but Jesus Christ doth come unto the soul, and comfort it in some measure;



his love; and, which is a second degree of liberty, giving some liberty of hope, that the Lord will be pleased to fill him with his blessed Spirit, which the Lord did more abundantly pour upon the Disciples after his Resurrection; And there is yet a more abundant fulfilling of all, when he doth come unto the proper work of the Spirit; and therefore he distinguisheth his own work, from the work of the Spirit, Joh. 14. 16, 17, 18. and 19, 21 he saith of himself, that He will not leave you comfortless; but he putteth this difference between his own work, and the work of the Spirit, Joh. 16. 25. Heber to I have spoken to you in parables; but the time comes, when I shall shall shew you plainly of the Father: yet he had spoken much unto them, and told them that he loved them, and that the Father loved them; but all is but a kind of parable in comparison of what the Lord will farther reveal, when he doth more fully send forth his Spirit into their hearts. In the mean while himself setteth on one word or other of his grace, whereby he gives the soul such a taste of himself (more then reprobates can have) as makes him thirst after more and more of Christ, until he be satisfied with the riches of the grace of God, Joh. 1. 16, 17.

3. Thirdly, When the Son hath thus brought us unto the Father, and shewed us his fatherly love towards us as he saith, Joh. 16. 26, 27. I say unto you, that I will pray the Father for you, for the Father himself loveth you. Then doth he keep us in this estate: And which is a farther work of the Son for this purpose he will send us his holy Spirit, as he told his Disciples, Joh. 16. 7. It is expedient for you, that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.

Thus

Thus as the Father send the Son: so will the Son send the Spirit; and in the mean while he doth preserve us until the Spirit come; and then he preserveth us by his Spirit. Now sometimes he makes his people tarry longer, before he send the Spirit in this kind of dispensation (but we leave the times and seasons thereof unto the free purpose of the grace of God) but I say, mean while the Son preserveth us. Joh. 6. 39. I live by the Father's will, that of all that be given me, I should lose nothing. So Joh. 17. 12. That thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost. He keeps us in a waiting frame of spirit, so that we cannot but thirst after him, and long for him, and mourn for the want of him; and then a braced ear shall be not break, and smoking flax shall be not quenched, until he bring forth judgment unto victory, Mat. 12. 20. Thus hath the Lord Jesus promised to keep us, and this he doth perform,

1. Partly; by praying for us, Luk. 22. 31, 32. Simon, Simon, Satan hath desired to have thee, that he may sift you as wheat; but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: So Joh. 17. 11, 20, 21, 22, 23. See Holy Father, keep through thy own Name, those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one; as we are, &c. and this is the eternal efficacy of the Son, whereby every believing soul is kept until he do finde fulness of accomplishment of his spiritual desires; and though we may be many ways wanting in prayer for our selves, yet he will give us his Spirit to pray within us with sighs and groans that cannot be expressed.

2. And as he will keep us by his prayer: so secondly, by his ruling Providence; for all power is given unto him, both in heaven, and in earth, Mat. 28. 18. and this power he doth employ to preserve his

servants from all the delusions of the sons of men.  
 The prophet Ezekiel complains of some, that thrust  
 and shoulder out the people of God, Ezek.  
 24. &c. but, saith the Lord, I will set up  
David: Jer. 23. &c. 25. They shall dwell  
in the wilderness, and sleep in the woods. None  
 of all the delusions of Antichrist, none of all the  
 power of Tyrants, nor all the flattering world, nor  
 the persecuting world shall be able to shoulder off  
 the Saints of God from him, 2 Tim. 1. 12. I am  
persuaded that he is able to keep that which I have com-  
mitted to him against that day: and the Lord Jesus  
 saith both his own power, and his Fa-  
 ther's power for this end, Joh. 10. 28, 29. I  
give unto them eternal life, and they shall never perish,  
neither shall they pluck them out of my hand: my Father  
 who gave them me, is greater then all, and no  
 man is able so pluck them out of my Father's  
 hand. Thus have you seen how Jesus Christ gives  
 himself unto Abraham, and to his seed, to become  
 one with us, to lead a miserable life, and dye an  
 cursed death, thereby to redeem us from all our  
 enemies unto a state of liberty, by an invaluable  
 price, even by himself. And having thus had the  
 Father drawing us unto Christ, (though the Father  
 had little unto the soul who had been about him all  
 this while, and so leaves the soul in no small distress)  
 so the Father's work is Power, so the Son's work is  
 Liberty and he revealeth to us our redemption; and  
 reveals it so, that the soul is set in an earnest long-  
 ing after Christ, (in whom there is a way to the Fa-  
 ther) and a great mourning after him, hungering  
 for him; so that nothing in heaven nor earth can  
 satisfy him; in which case, the Lord doth give  
 such



such strength and constancy unto the soul, in looking towards Christ, as encourageth him to expect reaching in the end, though at present he looks at all that he hath obtained as a parable in comparison of what he would further enjoy in communion with Jesus Christ; but it often befalls the servants of God, as it did the Disciples of Christ; they were put into new demurs, and doubtings: *We thought* (say they) *it had been he that should have restored the Kingdom in Israel*, Luk. 24. 21. (these were Simon, and Cleophas) if it had not been He, whom was the comfort and blessed hope of rest, which they looked for in Jesus Christ; we thought it had been he, a sign it was a demurr, and dispute in them, whether it was Gods grace in them, or Christ that had been with them, yea, or no: whilst they are at this debate in themselves, Jesus himself comes unto them, and reproves them for their unbelief, and chargeth them to tarry at Jerusalem, and there to wait for the promise of the Father. And thus doth the Lord Jesus teach us to know the Father, and reveals him to us by strengthening us unto all such holy duties as he calleth us unto; and though we be many times afraid to pray, to hear, to come to Christian conference; yet the Lord will not suffer us to refrain, but we must pray, and confer, and hear, and when we have used all, he teacheth us to know, that it is not in all these, as of themselves, to work any thing in us; nor doth he suffer us to content our selves in any thing wrought in us, but calleth us to thirst after more of himself in every Ordinance, until the Spirit comes in a plentiful measure, according to all the latitude of our desires after Christ Jesus.

¶ Now for the use of this, in the first place,

If be the work of the Sin be such a work of redemption, then certainly our state is a state of bondage before we be thus redeemed; yea, it is such a state of bondage, as wherein we lie bound under Gods Law, and under sin, under Gods wrath and curse; under the Devil and death, and under the power of the world, and all these enemies have power over us, we are captive unto sin and misery: so that great misery we lie under, if we knew our misery we know it, but are ready to say, with those Joh. We were never in bondage to any: oh poor hearts! then were you never redeemed to this very day: if thou never yet knowest thy bondage, thou never yet knowest thy redeemer; the Lord will never so dishonour his own work, as to pay so great a price to redeem those that never knew what it meant! nay, first he will teach them their bondage, ver. 34. He that committeth sin is the servant of sin; therefore if the Son make us free, we shall be free indeed; but otherwise we cannot be free.

Use 2. Secondly, it may reach all those that are under bondage, where your liberty and hope, and spiritual redemption lies: Isai. 45. 22. Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: look unto him.

Object. But may I not look at such good desires, and hungings and thirstings, and mournings after Christ, as are in me, to satisfy my self with them?

Ans. Alas, you may look long, and it may be much ado to kindle a spark of comfort? it may be you may get out a spark, but then it is but a sparkling light, neither will the Lord suffer his servants to tatten the satisfaction of their souls there: shall a man that is hungry look to his hungry and thirsting? will that satisfy him? It is indeed a sign of health, but it will not satisfy him: so

neither

neither will spiritual hungering and thirsting:  
 therefore helath, Come unto me, if you mean to  
 feed: it is not a mans weariness that doth set  
 his bones at rest; but, Come unto me, all you that are  
 weary and heavy laden, Mat. 11. 28. there hath be-  
 laid up our peace in coming to him we shall find ease,  
 even a certain secret relocation at least, that will  
 strengthen us to bear temptation: so as that you  
 may see the Fathers love, and you may also see your  
 own hungering and thirsting, for unto such the  
 Lord calleth us, and that puts a great deal of differ-  
 ence between a great deal of common work, and  
 such as is wrought by Gods efficacious drawing of  
 us home to Jesus Christ. Take you an hypocrite,  
 and if he begin to mourn for Christ, and the like,  
 he is much troubled in these things; but is this the  
 way of the working of Gods almighty power, to  
 bring men unto something that is in themselves?  
 Is it not his effectual calling of us unto Christ? doth  
 not Christ say, If any man thirst let him come to me  
and drink? Otherwise all is but unprofitable work,  
 untill you come unto Christ: so far as Christ is there,  
 so far there is life. If we be drawn unto him, that  
 as he beginneth the work, so he is the end of it in  
 us; and the soul cannot rest but in cleaving unto  
 him, then there is something more then flesh and  
 blood hath revealed. So that this is the way that  
 God calleth his servants to walk in, namely, to look  
 unto Christ to possess him strong hold, Zach. 9. 12.  
By his blood he hath delivered his prisoners out of the pri-  
son: where there is no water: our strength lieth not in  
our own hanging and thirsting, and poverty,  
though there be truth in these, and everlasting truth,  
by token of the Spirit that wrought them, and the  
blood that bought them; yet your strong hold is  
 not



not in them, but in the rock of Israel: he is the horn  
of saluation to his people: so that I would advise  
every poor soul, in whom is wrought any mourn-  
ing after Christ, through sense of your need of him,  
make the Lord Jesus your strong hold. And this  
is the true work, and way of the Son of God to bring  
unto the Father: and the more you find the Lord  
Jesus, the more you shall discern the gifts that are  
promised unto you, and the comfort and power of  
them: not that I deny that Jesus Christ doth open  
into the soul, what he hath done for him, Joh. 6.  
69. We beleeue and are sure that thou art Christ, the

276  
 3. Thirdly, This may teach Christians, that  
 we in such a way as this, to hold on in that way  
 for truly it is a way of comfort through the grace of

of 1000000, my boy, dead & buried with me, in a grave of totalists, but after his repentance & much ado I had to, to revive & recover it self again in 7.

deemed thee; none of the redeemed of God need to fear, Luke 1. 74. We are delivered, that we might serve him without fear; It is in the Lord Jesus that the Apollle doth so triumph, Rom. 8. 31. &c. who can be against us? who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods Elect? who is he that condemneth? it is Christ that died, &c. and hereupon he triumpheth, laying, Who shall separate us from the love of God? &c. and though we may lay, that he was grown to a greater measure of strength then we now speak of; yet this is the work of all the Israel of God, to hope in the Lord, in whom is plenteous redemption, Plal. 130. 7.

Use 4. Fourthly, This may serve to teach us to wait upon the Lord, for this his plenteous redemption; and to bleis his name for it when we find it; Psal. 103. 4. Bless the Lord O my soul, who redeemeth thy life from destruction, &c. Let us learn to serve him with thankfulness, and to grow up therein; for this is the great redemption, wherewith the Lord hath redeemed us to himself: he that hath thus redeemed us, will still redeem and deliver us, 2 Cor. 1. 10. he that hath done this, will not leave us, until he hath finished all his thoughts of peace to us.

Use 5. In the fift and last place, let it exhort us to stand fast in all our Christian liberties: they cost dear, and we are redeemed from the Covenant and curse of the Law of God (from the Laws of men much more, that are not according to God) be not therefore servants to lusts and passions, to the world & to the Devil: let us tread the world under foot; seeing God hath redeemed us let us walk as his redeemed ones, redeemed from all errors of mind and judgement: standing fast in all that liberty, wherewith Christ hath made us free, Gal. 5. 1. and be

was again entangled with the yoke of bondage: it was a bondage that we were in before, and a bondage greater then either we or our fathers were able to bear: let us therefore stand fast in our liber-

**to Quest.** We come now to the tenth *Question*, How God the Holy Ghost gives himself to Abraham, and his elect seed, in the Covenant of Grace? For if God give himself, he doth not onely give his nature, but his persons: God the Father gives himself, and God the Son gives himself, and God the Holy Ghost gives himself unto the people of God: Job. 14. 16, 17. I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him, but ye know him: for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you: if then the Holy Ghost be given, as well as the Father, and the Son, How is he given? Or how doth he give himself unto the Church, and unto all the Israel of God?

**Ans.** There be four several Acts or works whereby the Holy Ghost is given to the Church, and to his people: for though the Lord Jesus pray the Father for him, and the Father sendeth him, and the Son also sendeth him, Job. 15. 26. yet the Holy Ghost himself doth come upon his people, Act. 2. 2. &c. and he comes by a fourfold act.

1. First, by *indwelling* or *inhabitation* in the Church.

2. Secondly, by an act of *Sanctification*.

3. Thirdly, by an act of *Revelation*; and therefore he is called a *Spirit of Revelation*, and that is proper to the Holy Ghost.

4. Fourthly,



4. Fourthly, by an act of *Consolation*; and therefore he is called the *Comforter*.

1. First, for *Inhabitation*, so saith the Apostle, *Ephes. 2. 22. You are builded together in Christ, for an habitation of God through the Spirit*; in this respect also it is the Apostle's demand of the Corinthians, *1 Cor. 3. 16. Know you not that you are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?* So in the place fore-alleged, *Joh. 14. 16, 17.* and when he saith, *dwell in you*, it noteth the constancy of his being in them; he will abide in his dwelling place; for *Joh. 2. 27.* the anointing there promised, is the Spirit; and great is the necessity of his *in-dwelling* in us, for two principal reasons.

*Reas. 1.* The first is taken from the necessity of our union into one mystical spiritual body with the Lord Jesus; which by this means is firmly and inviolably wrought, *1 Cor. 6. 17. He that is joined to the Lord is one Spirit*; in as much as that one Spirit who dwelleth in Christ without measure, dwelleth in us according to our measure; and so we are all one mystical body: and I cannot tell how better to compare it, then to a musical instrument, wherein though there be many pipes, yet one blast of the bellows puts breath into them all; so that all of them at once break forth into a kind of melody, and give a pleasant sound to the ears of those that stand by; all of them do make but one Instrument, and one sound, and yet variety of musick. So is this very case: look at all the living members of Christ, they are all compacted together, and set into one flock, and root; by which means it comes to pass, that though they be many thousands, yet they all make a melodious harmony in the ears of the Lord of Hosts; therefore for the combining, of us into  
the

unity of one Spirit, necessary it is, that the same Spirit that breathes in the humane nature of Christ, should breath in us all : and though the divine Nature of Christ be God, the humane Nature is finite, and yet hath the Spirit above the capacity of the creature : and this same Spirit doth act, and guide, and move all our affairs in him ; and (which is wonderful) it comes to pass, that the same Spirit breathing in Christ and in us, we have not only a measure of Spirit to do one duty, but he doth concur with us in all spiritual duties which we undertake according to him ; for *without him we can do nothing*, Joh. 15. 5. This is the first reason of the *inhabitation* of the Spirit, to keep alive spiritual union between Christ and us ; therefore is there one Spirit in us all.

*Reas. 2.* Secondly, another end of this *inhabitation* of the Spirit, is to keep *possession* for the Lord in our hearts against all adversary power ; for if the Lord should leave his gifts only to keep possession there, the devil would make very hard work with the best gifts that we have received : he blasted all the precious gifts that *Adam* had received, which were more perfect in degrees than any we receive ; and yet when all the powers of darkness and gates of hell are banded together against *Jesus Christ* and his servants, there is not the least of the servants of God that falleth away finally : and the Apostle *John* gives the reason of it, 1 Joh. 4. 4. *Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is he that is in you, then he that is in the world.* Neither are we preserved by faith only, but by the mighty power of God, 1 Pet. 1. 5. The Spirit it is that setteth the Faith awork, and Christ it is that setteth the Spirit awork, to keep us unto his heavenly kingdom. And from this possession of the Spirit there

there comes a garrison, as it were, to be kept in our hearts, whereby our souls are kept alive; so that the Spirit doth not only shed abroad his gifts into our hearts, but he keeps our hearts in a sweet frame of sanctification. 2 Tim. 1. 14. *That good thing which was committed to thee, keep by the Holy Ghost, which dwelleth in us*; that goodly depositum, his Evangelical Gift that did accompany his own salvation, and the salvation of the Church, he must keep it by the *Holy Ghost that dwelleth in us*; otherwise our gifts would soon vapour out into smoak and ashes, whether it be faith, hope, zeal, patience, courage, or whatsoever else is requisite for the salvation of Gods people: the Spirit by his power dwelling in us, acteth, and preserveth them: *the sons of God are led by the Spirit*, Rom. 8. 14. nor is this a confining of the Spirit of God unto poor houses of clay; *Solomons Temple* could not contain him; no, nor the heaven of heavens, he dwelleth above all heavens unmeasurably, yet *he dwelleth also with him that is of an humble and contrite spirit*, Isa. 57. 15. though it were a poor kitchen-boy that hath such a spirit, he dwelleth there, *to receive the spirit of the humble*. As those that dwell in earthly houses, there they take up their rest, and lay up their treasure; and there they delight to converse: even thus doth the Spirit of God; and it is a wonderful Indulgence of the most High, that *dwels in temples made with our hands*, so to be pleased to dwell in the sons and daughters of men, to make good his own eternal counsel for their salvation. There is I Confess also some kind of presence of the Spirit of God even in hypocrites, that are only fitted to some work of God, and therefore only attain to some work of common Grace, but not such as doth accompany



company salvation: you will find this difference between them, and Gods own children; the Spirit of God indeed comes upon them, as he did upon Saul, 1 Sam. 10. 10. so that he prophesied; and more then so, he doth sometimes continue with them for a season, and sojourneth a while in them, according as sometimes it is said, Jer. 14. 8. he is *like a stranger, or a wayfaring man, that carrieth for a night*; thus we read, 1 Sam. 16. 14. *The Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and an evil Spirit from the Lord troubled him*; a sign the Spirit of God had been with him before. So Zedekiah, when he smote Micaiah, on the cheek, and said, *Which way went the Spirit of God from me, to speak unto thee?* 1 King. 22. 24. a sign it may be that he had sometimes found the Spirit of God, but now he was departed: however it be the Spirit of God is in them but for a season, until he be grieved by them, and then he doth depart; and indeed did never bestow any regenerating grace upon them, but only fitted them for some kinde of service for his Church, or the Common-wealth. So likewise Jehu, and Judas, and Demas, did much for a season, by the Spirit of God: he did enlighten their minds, and open their mouthes, and gave free passage to their administrations; and you may sometimes wonder how men have been assisted in the pulpit both in prayer and preaching, that have been notorious in wickedness: thus it pleaseth God to come, and sojourn in them, and work great works by them, such as may be of great use among his people, and may leave themselves without excuse: but you see where the difference lieth, even as it lay between the anointing of Saul, & Jehu, David, & Solomon, the anointing of Saul, was with a Vial of Oyl, & of Jehu with a box of Oyl,

1 Sam.

1 Sam. 10. 1. 2 Kin. 9. 1. the word in the Original is the same in both places, and it was not an empty Ceremony; Gods Ceremonies are accompanied with gifts suitable unto them: his Spirit came upon them both, and they did mighty service in their times; but when *David* was to be anointed, God commanded *Samuel* to fill up his *horn* with oyl, in 1 Sam. 16. 1. and in like manner did *Zadock* unto *Solomon*, 1 Kin. 1. 39. Now an *horn* is not of a brittle Metal, but a *glass* is soon broken; the *horn* is the beauty and power of the Beale: so that when the Spirit is conveyed in the *beale* and power of *Iesus Christ*, it now giveth beauty and strength to the soul, and is not dried up nor broken in pieces, but abideth in the Saints unto the heavenly kingdom. This is the first work of the Spirit of God: he doth give himself unto his people in a way of *inhabitation*; he dwelleth in them, and unites them to Christ, and keeps them from being drawn away from God, by men or Angels. (I mean evil Angels) and preserves alive all their gifts and graces; and acts and quickens them, so as may be for the edification of those that are with them, in Church and Commonwealth.

2. Secondly, As the Spirit of God gives himself in a work of *inhabitation*: so doth he give himself in a work of *sanctification*: and that is a work usual in all our Catechisms, [*the Holy Ghost doth sanctifie and preserve us.*] Let us look into some places of Scripture for the proof of it. 2 Th. 2. 13. *God hath from the beginning chosen you, through sanctification of the Spirit.* &c. he chose us to be saved through a course of sanctification: it is not the cause of election, but the way of salvation, in which the Spirit leadeth us to 1 Pst. 1. 2. *Eled according to the foreknowledge of God,*

God, through sanctification of the Spirit unto obedience. So that it is the Spirit that sanctifieth us to be obedient; and a notable place to this purpose have we in the delivery of the Covenant of Grace, Jer. 31. 33. I will put my law in their inward parts; and write it in their hearts; he means, the law of holiness and righteousness; and he will so write it in the hearts of his people, that it shall be carried abroad with power in them; accordingly doth the Apostle testify concerning the Corinthians, 2 Cor. 3. 3. Ye are manifestly declared to be the Epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart; it is the Spirit of God therefore that writeth these laws in our hearts, and leaveth an impression of some measure of power to be guided by them; he worketh in us both to will, and to do, of his own good pleasure; he stampeth upon the soul such gifts of his grace as make us serviceable in our course to his heavenly Kingdom: and hence it is, that we read, Ezek. 36. 27. I will put my Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes; &c. this is a Spirit of sanctification. To make it somewhat more plain; The Spirit of God is said to be our sanctifier, partly as he doth work the work of the two other persons, and partly as he worketh his own work; though in all these works they all concur, yet they have their several characters, wherein they more peculiarly shew forth what ever work any of the persons do, they do it by the Spirit; and yet he doth a peculiar work, wherein though they concur, yet he is eminent in it. It is the proper work of the Father to draw us unto Christ: Joh. 6. 44. & 1 Pet. 1. 3. Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who according to his abundant

mercy



mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope; that  
is the proper work of a Father, to beget; he shed-  
deh abroad the Spirit upon us through Jesus Christ  
our Saviour. Tit. 3. 6. thus doth the Holy Ghost san-  
ctify us; as the Father doth regenerate us, and frame  
us to be new creatures; though it be the Father's  
work in us, yet he worketh it by the Holy Spirit.  
And for the work of the Son, the proper character  
of a son is liberty, a servant is in bondage; a child  
in the way of child-like liberty may expect much  
from his father, this the Lord Jesus properly giveth,  
Mat. 11. 28. Come unto me, and I will give you rest;  
freedom, and ease of Conscience; he gives his ser-  
vants: and how doth he work this ease and liberty,  
but by his Spirit, the same Spirit that is in him,  
dwelleth in us, and breathes a kind of liberty in us,  
which it hath from Jesus Christ. For where the Spi-  
rit of the Lord is, there is liberty. 1 Cor. 3. 17. and  
where he is, you may see the soul hath liberty from  
the anguish of Temptations: so that, is there any  
ease? any liberty? This from Jesus Christ the Son  
of liberty, who hath taken some peace unto the soul.  
Thus the Father doth reveal the Son in us; and in  
pursue of sanctification the Father doth regenerate us;  
but it is by a Spirit of regeneration; the Son redeem-  
eth unto liberty, by a Spirit of liberty; he comes in  
the Fathers name, and in the Sons name, to carry  
off that work, which they have in hand in the Saints.  
John 14. 26. and chap. 15. 26. the Father will send  
him, and I will send him; and the Holy Ghost doth  
kindly work with us, to make us regenerate sons  
unto the Lord; these things he doth in their names;  
he doth some things also in his own name; though  
from their power alone, now though both these are  
sanctifying works, there is a third work of sancti-

which is proper to the Spirit; this was, fore-  
 told by Christ, Act. 1. 8. You shall receive power after  
the Holy Ghost is come upon you: they were the sons  
 of God before, and free sons before, set at liberty  
 by the Spirit of the Son; but there is yet more to  
 come; you shall receive power after the Holy Ghost is  
come upon you: so this is the proper sanctifying work  
 of the Spirit, to give a further power in sanctificati-  
on; he doth imprint a character of power upon our  
 sanctification, that we have not only power to be  
 called the sons of God, nor to be free sons of God,  
 but powerful also, 2 Tim. 1. 7, the Lord hath given  
us the Spirit of power: when the Spirit worketh this,  
 he worketh his own proper work. And as there is  
 such a kind of threefold degree in a spirit of sanctifi-  
cation: so there is a kind of semblable work; that is  
 found in hypocrites in some measure; for as you  
 read of the Holy Ghost his coming upon them, so  
 shall you find mention made of their sanctification,  
Heb. 10. 29. they are said to tread under foot the blood  
of the Covenant; wherewith they were sanctified: so  
Mat. 20. 16. Many are called, but few are chosen;  
 doth he mean, by the outward call of the word? tru-  
 ly you shall finde, that the context will carry you  
 much farther then so; for consider upon what oc-  
 casion our Saviour speaketh it: there was a certain  
 rich man, that would have forsaken all, and fol-  
 lowed Christ, but he found it too costly; but Peter  
 said, We have forsaken all, and followed thee, what  
shall we have therefore? verily, saith Christ, Ye that have  
followed me in the regeneration, (meaning, in the rege-  
 neration of the world) shall sit upon twelve thrones,  
&c. but many of those that do forsake much, shall  
 be lost; and the last shall be first, for the Kingdom of  
 heaven is like unto a certain householder, that hired  
 of; & men.

men into his vineyard : and some he hired early in the morning, some at the third hour, some at the sixth, some at the ninth, some at the eleventh ; and when he comes to reckon, he payeth every man a penny : they that bore the heat of the day, expected to have received more ; whereupon the Lord Jesus gives this as one answer,

*puce.* Many are called, but few are chosen : they may be called to forsake brethren, and sisters, and fathers, and mothers ; and that out of conscience unto Christ ; and much they have done for Christ ; they have laboured for Christ, and born the burden and heat of the day ; they had a calling to come into the vineyard, and there they have wrought ; and yet of these, few are chosen : so that it was not a meer verbal calling, no, here is a kind of strong spiritual calling ; which did prevail to withdraw them, from all the comforts of this life, so far it was effectual : and yet these were not chosen : so that there is a sanctification, that doth not flow from Gods eternal election ; and therefore it is not to be despised that the Apostle doth add, Rom. 8. 28. *To them that are called according to his purpose* ; otherwise there is a calling, that comes from Gods purpose of free grace ; and then it carrieth them along no farther, then to do some outward service for God ; they may do much harvest-work, and yet not be called according to purpose : so then we see there is a calling and sanctification, that reacheth unto them that are but common hypocrites ; whence it comes to pass, they will work much according to it, for sanctification is that which worketh from God, the thing of God, and for the glory of God ; this is sanctification in the proper meaning of it ; and this you shall find in hypocrites : For they will work from God, Mat. 7. 22. *Have we not prophesied in thy name, and in thy name*



name, and in thy name cast out devils; they knew  
their own name would not reach it, therefore they  
will make God their efficient cause: and it is a great  
 word, which the Lord spake unto *Jehu*, 2 King.  
 10. 30. because thou hast done well in executing that  
which was right in my eyes, and hast done unto the house  
of Abab according to all that was in my heart; thus he  
 wrought the things of God, and pretended the glo-  
 ry of God *vers.* 16. and which is more wonderful,  
 that they should for the sake of Jesus Christ do ma-  
 ny things *Mat.* 19. 29. and these not chosen, and  
 such as shall be lost in the recompence; and what  
 is yet wanting in these mens sanctification? is the  
 change of their heart wanting? truly, not altoge-  
 ther; for the Lord gave *Saul* another heart, 2 *Sam.*  
 10. 9. But mind it, though it was somewhat al-  
 tered in *quality*, yet not in *substance*; it was not a  
 new heart, not an heart of flesh, for that is peculiar  
 to the Covenant of Grace; they want that self-de-  
 nyng faith that is found in all new hearted Chri-  
 tians, whereby they deny even themselves, *Luk.* 9.  
 23. for a man to be all *from Christ*, and all *in Christ*,  
 and all *for Christ*; this is wanting to these *moral*  
*sanctifications* that are found in men. But wherein  
 then is the defect of their sanctification discovered?  
 in this: Take you a man sanctified, as *Saul*, *Jehu*,  
*Judas*, *Demas*, these were men of good account;  
*Samuel* had a good esteem of *Saul*; and *Jonadab*  
 bears *Jehu* record, that his heart was upright with  
 him; the *Disciples* mistrust themselves rather than  
*Judas*; and *Paul* ranketh *Demas* with *Marcks* and  
*Tristarchus* his fellow-labourers; yet in all these  
 there was no self-denying faith; for he that comes to  
 Christ, and closeth with Christ, must *deny himself*;  
 then in this these men do shew themselves dif-

ferent from the chosen of God, they come not to Christ with a self-denying heart; they seem to work all in the name of Christ; yet they still work in their own power and strength, or at least they work for themselves. You read of some, that took delight in the Lord, *Isai. 58. 2, 3.* and yet if God do not hear their prayers, they are offended; a sign they wrought in the fence of the worth of their own works: so also those in *Mat. 7. 22.* *Have not we prophesied in thy Name?* they do expostulate with God, why he should cast off them; they expected a bountiful reward for the works they had done: they wrought from themselves, and for themselves: and so those many that were called, *Mat. 23.* they had denied father, and mother, and wife, and children; and therefore they looked for great reward, having born the burden and heat of the day: and this is the proper character of an hypocrite, he doth challenge his reward out of the worth of his work; whereas the chosen ones of God are taught to say, *When we have done all that is commanded us, we are unprofitable servants,* *Luk. 17. 10.* this is one difference in the rule of the work.

Again, there is a difference in the work it self. Gods chosen ones work the will of Christ, and not their own, though their will also goeth along with it: others work the will of Christ, as far as it will stand with their own: *Jehu's* zeal did root out *Baal*, and the house of *Ahab* freely; he drove it furiously, for it was an act of his own ambitious heart, to settle his own Kingdom: this he aimed at, no further would he go; from the sins of *Jeroboam* the son of *Nebat* he departed not,

And Lastly, Hypocrites will out-shoot Ch

in his own bow; they will aim at their own ends in Christ's works: Jehu will root out Ahab; and Baal, but it is to establish his own kingdom; to walk in all the Lords Commandments he did not regard: while Gods will accomplisheth his will, he goeth along with it, but no farther. Thus we see there is a work of sanctification under a Covenant of works, such as whereby men have another heart, and many gifts of courage, and wisdom, and zeal, and power come upon them for the service of the Church; and yet you will find that they will work from themselves, and for themselves; and for God they will not work beyond their own ends; and though they seem to walk with him for a while, yet you shall soon see the Lord will take one course, and they will take another.

3. We now come unto a third work of the Holy Ghost, in which he doth give himself as God unto his people; for in all these works he doth work as God, and so expresseth himself: this work is Divine revelation; he doth reveal himself like a God in the soul, that so you may acknowledge his presence, power and truth: a very clear place we have for it, Eph. 1. 17, 18. &c. I cease not to make mention of you in my prayers that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him. &c. mark how the Apostle doth consider God in regard of his most eminent glory, and power; as he is the God of Jesus Christ, and the Father of glory, That he might give us the Spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him; that is, of the Father, Son and Spirit: That the eyes of your understanding being enlightened, ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance



inheritance in the Saints, &c. minde what Divine revelation here is, see how gloriously God is set forth that giveth it, and also the gift that is given; and these things the Apostle prayeth not only for glorious and transcendent Christians, men of renown; but for all the *Ephesians*, for all ordinary Christians among them; he would have none of them destitute of a Spirit of wisdom and revelation: and what should this Spirit do? it should *enlighten* the organ, even the eyes of their understanding, otherwise it is beyond the power of created gifts, to reach the clear discerning of the mysteries of the Kingdom of God, as they are dispenced in the Gospel of Christ: and as in all sight there is the *Organ*, and the *Medium*, & the *Object*; the eye is the *organ*, the air is the *medium*, the *thing seen* is the *object*: so the Apostle here prays, that *the eyes of their understanding might be enlightened*, far above the capacity of Reason, yea, above the capacity of the spiritual gifts, which they had received; for he desires that a spirit of *wisdom and revelation* might be given them; though the Lord had blessed them with all spiritual blessings already; they had beleived, and had been sealed; yet here is something more to be attained, they want a further enlightening by the clearing of the word of God, which is the *medium*, by which we discern all things therein: and for the *Object*, he doth express what it is; *that you may know what is the hope of his calling, and the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints: and what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward which believe*, &c. these things the Apostle prayeth that the Spirit would reveal, even the hope that God hath laid up for his Saints: *glorious things are spoken of the church of God*; great and glorious hopes are prepared for them, and they are begotten

written unto them, even to an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, that by vertue of our calling we might have fellowship with God the Father, & with his Son Jesus Christ, 1 *Joh.* 1. 2, 3. some degree of fellowship we have already; but the hope of that which is to come, is beyond all our comprehension, and beyond what any created understanding can search into the depth of: and yet we may see much in the hope of preservation, and quickening to that which is good: in the hope of God's turning all things to the best for us; we may see much of the rich and plenteous redemption which God hath wrought for us, and what goodness of God is reserved to every poor servant of his, and what is the riches of his glorious inheritance in his Saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, even that mighty power, which he did put forth to bring us to believe, that ever he should bring such hearts as ours were, to be enlightened, to see the blessings of his heavenly calling, to be called unto fellowship with the Father, and with the Son, and with the Spirit, and with the Church of God in all the promises of God, and gifts of grace, and duties of sanctification: our calling is to be exercised in them all, untill at length all their enemies be subdued, and death at length swallowed up in victory: This the Apostle prayeth for, that their eyes might be opened to behold all these mysteries. And thus doth the Holy Ghost clear up our understandings, and the Scriptures whereby we understand, and the objects which are to be understood by us, even the riches of grace here bestowed upon us, and laid up in heaven for us.

*Ques.* But how doth the Holy Ghost work these things? indeed they are unconceivable mysteries, better felt then told.

*Answer.* The Spirit doth reveal himself partly in witnessing unto our spiritual estate, and partly by revealing all other counsels of his truth needful for us to know in this our age and time wherein any Christian man liveth.

Touching our estate, He is called a witness, 1 Joh. 5. 6. It is the Spirit that beareth witness; because the Spirit is truth: there are six witnesses mentioned in that text: three in heaven, the Father, the word, and the Holy Ghost & three in earth, the Spirit, the water, and the blood; but it is the Spirit that beareth witness in all these.

But doth not the water and the blood bear witness? truly they do, but it is in the hands of the Spirit: and that is plain by the 9. ver. wherein the Apostle giveth us to understand, that if any thing be confirmed by any of those witnesses, it is the witness of God, because indeed the Spirit witnesseth in them all.

*Object.* You will say, Doth not a Divine work yield a Divine Testimony? and are not the water of sanctification, and the blood of justification Divine works? and will they not reach a Divine Testimony?

*Answer.* It is not a Divine Testimony, unless the Spirit of God bear witness in and by it: for are not the heavens and the earth Divine works, which the power of the creature cannot reach unto? all are Divine works, even to the least hairs of our head; for we cannot make one of them, white or black: and yet an argument from the creature is no Divine Testimony, unless the Spirit of God set it home: if it be from the least work, when the Spirit of God beareth witness in it, there is a powerful Testimony: the Magicians of Egypt do profess, when



when Moses brought the Plague of Lice, that *it was*  
*the finger of God*; when as in greater works they did  
not acknowledge it, but thought they could do the  
like; and what was the reason that they were con-  
founded in the Lice? truly, because the Spirit of  
God would on purpose breath in that work to con-  
found them in so mean a creature: all which shew-  
eth us thus much, that it is not in the power of  
Divine works, though they be never so immediate;  
that are able to work Divine faith in us, unless the  
Holy Ghost breath in them; and then, though it  
were but some *creeping work*, or *word*, it would breath  
a strong testimony to some former work of God:  
so that it is the Spirit of God, that doth make Di-  
vine Testimony both in heaven, and in earth: o-  
therwise howsoever the judgment may be by some  
means convinced, yet a lively faith will not be  
wrought. To speak something unto particulars:  
the Father beareth witness and the Son beareth wit-  
ness of himself, and many great works which he  
wrought, bear witness of him all his life long. Take  
you now the Father's work, which is to draw the  
soul unto Christ, through a Spirit of bondage to  
make us sensible of our need of him; for every man  
that hath heard and learned of the Father, comes  
unto Christ, Joh. 6. 44. and no man can come  
unto Christ, except the Father draw him: so  
Mat. 16. 17. *Flesh and blood hath not revealed it un-*  
*to thee, but my Father which is in heaven*: so Gal. 1.  
15. 16. *When it pleased God to reveal his Son in me*;  
now though these be the work and witness of  
the Father, yet doth he not work them imme-  
diately, but by his Spirit, as he saith expressly,  
1 Cor. 2. 9. 10. *Eye hath not seen, nor ear hath*  
*heard, neither hath it entered into the heart of*  
*man*

men, the things which God hath prepared for them that love him: but God hath revealed them unto us by the Spirit, &c. In like manner, when the Father discovereth Christ, unto us, and draw us unto Christ, it is by the Spirit that he doth these things.

When the Son bringeth on the soul unto Christian liberty (for liberty is the property of the Son) and reveals the Father's love unto the soul, Joh. 16. 27, a son-like spirit doth this; it is the Spirit of his Son that maketh us cry, Abba, Father, Gal. 4. 6, 7. Also the Spirit beareth witness, by a testimony from it self, which it doth set on more clearly, then either of the former testimonies; according to Joh. 16. 25. The time comes, when I shall speak no more to you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father: He comes with power, and speaketh peace more plentifully unto the soul. All. 1. 8. Psal. 85. 8. Isai. 57. 19. All which sheweth us, that the Spirit setteth on his testimony with more clearness, power, and certainty unto the soul; therefore he is called the *unction* by which the Saints know all things, 1 Joh. 2. 20. by his testimony we have more full assurance of all things concerning our spiritual estate. It is he also that doth bear witness in the water, and in the blood, for otherwise though the Spirit be never so much broken in the sense of sin, as David's was, and he saw it, Psal. 51. 27. it was the Spirit that gave him to see it, and yet he still begs the upholding of the free Spirit, ver. 12. for without him, neither the water of sanctification, nor the blood of justification will clearly establish the heart in the peace of God: Faith itself is not able to beget more assurance of faith; nay, it is not all the word of God, that is able to put life into faith, though the whole word

of God beareth witness unto faith : wherefore is the word excluded from the number of the witnesses ? — all is carried home unto the soul by the word ; whether the Father reveal the Son, or the Son reveal the Father, all is by the word : likewise also whatsoever the Spirit doth reveal, it is by the word, Joh. 14. 26. He shall bring all things unto your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you : he makes the word take deep impression upon the soul : but the word of God of it self, doth not testifie, though it be the counsel of God : for the Lord would not have his people to scramble out a testimony from the word, nor from his works ; for they will not afford it, unless the Spirit be in them : but when the Spirit doth accompany them, then will the soul finde matter to build upon ; otherwise though sanctification may convince a gainsayer, yet Divine faith is only wrought by the Spirit breathing in the word of life. Thus have we seen that it is the Spirit that beareth witness (in all the six Witnesses) unto the state of a Christian.

It is the Spirit also that beareth witness unto all things else that are needful for us to know in our times, 1 Joh. 2. 20. Joh. 14. 26. The anointing teacheth you all things : the Comforter shall teach you all things. Great is the power of the Spirit to beget and encrease faith, by the word of God and by the works of his providence, he causeth the soul to trust in God, and to say, He that hath delivered me out of six troubles, will not he deliver me out of the seventh ? otherwise if the Spirit do not set in, though judgment be convinced, yet the heart is not enlarged to believe : David could not gainsay Nathan, when he told him from the Lord, that God had put away his sin, he should not dye ; yet still he prayed.



prayed for mercy, Psal. 51. 1. and for establishment  
 with Gods free Spirit, ver. 12. and, *Make me to hear  
 the voice of joy and gladness*, ver. 8. why? had he  
 not heard it already? it was a most gracious word  
 that *Nathan* spake; true, but he is not yet clear in  
 it; it is that *Holy Ghost*, that must make him to hear  
 the voice of joy and gladness: otherwise, though  
 a man hath much experience of Gods goodness to  
 him, and fits and talks of the wonderful things that  
 God hath done for him, to the warming of the  
 hearts of all that hear him; yet the soul cannot reach  
 that abundant satisfaction, which he doth desire,  
 till at length the Lord comes in some Ordinance  
 of his, and beareth witness freely of love bestowed  
 upon us; and such a testimony will marvelously  
 settle and establish any soul in the world: so that it  
 is the *Spirit* that beareth witness unto faith, and  
 nothing can do it but the *Spirit* only; and yet if  
 the *Spirit* should breath out of the word, it were  
 but a delusion, *Isai. 8. 20. To the law and to the  
 testimony: if they speak not according to that, it is be-  
 cause they have no light in them:* And therefore the  
 Lord couples his word, and his *Spirit* together, *Isa.  
 57. 19. I create the fruit of the lips, peace, peace:*  
 though it be creating work, yet it is by the fruit of  
 the lips: so likewise *Isai. 59. 21. My Spirit that  
 is upon thee, and my words that I have put in thy mouth  
 shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth  
 of thy seed, nor out of the mouth of thy seeds seed,  
 from henceforth and for ever.* Thus the Spirit of  
 God in the word is mighty to begin, and mighty  
 to carry an end spiritual work in the soul. Now the  
 ordinary manner of the revelation of the Spirit  
 is, if he reveal Gods free justification of us, it  
 is by revealing his free grace in a promise nor  
 made

made to works, no not to *faith* it self, but rather as a thing to be created by the word of a free promise unto *sanctification* indeed he doth bear witness in any promise; as, if the question be about *Abraham's sanctification*, how the Lord did reveal it? we may see Gen. 22. 12. *By this I know that thou fearest me, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me*: but for his *justification*, the Lord had revealed that in another promise, Gen. 15. 5, 6. wherein God brought him forth, and bids him, *Look now towards heaven, and tell the stars, if thou be able to number them*: and he said unto him, *So shall thy seed be*; and among them he shews him that seed, that shall be *a blessing unto all nations*: this is a thing beyond his capacity, but *this be believed, and it was counted unto him for righteousness*: now in this the Lord reveals nothing but his free grace, without any respect unto any goodness in *Abraham*: *faith* was in him before, and had put forth it self; *by faith when he was called, he went out, not knowing whither he went*, Heb. 11. 8. but a man is justified not by the *habit* of *faith* only; but by every *act* of *faith*, and as often as this is revealed, so often is the grace of God revealed unto the soul: for it is nothing that God teacheth in *Abraham*, for which he doth reveal his *justification* to him; but this he doth freely of his grace; and so *Abraham* receives it, Rom. 4. 5, 6, &c. *To him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted to him for righteousness*; which shews us, that *Abraham*, looks at himself as an ungodly man, when he considereth his *justification*: not but that *Abraham* was now godly in Scripture account before, but he looked at him that justifieth the ungodly:

David describeth the blessedness of the man, to whom the Lord imputeth righteousness without works: for thus the Lord setteth it home unto the heart without works, saying, Blessed is the man whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered; so it is free blessedness that the Lord reveals unto the soul: and lest you should think, that these things were peculiar to Abraham and David, &c. he tells us, ver. 23, 24. that it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him; but for us also, &c. As it was with the Father of the faithful, so it is also with all believers, which are his children: that as he considered not his own body that was dead, nor the deadness of Sarah's womb: so neither should we consider this or that in our bodies, or souls; for if we were thus and thus fitted for justification, then the reward would be of works, and so a debt unto us: now though works be there, when justification is, again and again revealed, yet it comes not into sight, for a double reason;

Reas. 1. First, Because when the Lord appears as justifying the soul, he sits upon a throne of justice, and a throne of grace together, not accepting any righteousness but that which is compleat, and adequate, Rom. 3. 26. To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness, that he might be just, and the justifier of him, that believeth in Jesus: it is not justice for God to pronounce a man just upon any other righteousness, besides the righteousness of his Son, for if God should mark what we have done, no flesh living should be justified in his sight: Psa. 143. 2. but through the righteousness of Christ, which is perfect, the Lord justifies every one that believeth in him; & that act of faith whereby a man taketh hold on Christ, & receiveth Christ, that is it which quieteth the soul: for



it is not meet that the Lord should justify any simple work of mine : for if the Lord should justify me so *mine own clothes would defile me* : and if I should come before him with any work, which he hath wrought in me, to be accepted for it, this would be preposterous, and out of place : for he will have a full righteousness to accept me, before he will pronounce me righteous : and therefore I am first called to his Son ; for as there is no more required to make me a sinful man, but that I be found in *Adam* : so there is no more required to my justification, but that I should have union with the *second Adam*.

*Reas. 2.* Secondly, As the Lord doth sit upon a Throne of justice, when he justifies a soul, so he doth also upon a Throne of grace, Rom. 3. 24. *We are justified freely by his grace* ; therefore he will not justify any man upon works, lest they should boast before him ; and therefore you shall finde it to be true, that if the Lord be to declare his acceptance of the sanctification of his people, he will not do it in respect of the worth of their works, but according to the grace of his promise.

*Object.* But is not my sanctification a work of free grace ? and doth one grace hinder another ? such is *Bellarmines* reason against justification by grace : what ? (saith he) doth grace fight against grace ? if we say, We be justified by our works, it is grace that gives us those works, and a will unto them ; thus doth he confesse.

Our Divines answer is, That if our justification be of grace, it is not of works ; and if it be of works, it is not of grace : so in like manner, if the Lord do shew himself in a matter of grace, let all our works be silent ; for if *Abraham hath whereof to glory*, it is

not before God: so then, if grace appear, it is not in our works; and therefore if God do speak any comfort unto *sanctification*, he will put his servants quite off from the conceit of their own holiness. Thus we finde it, 2 Sam. 7. 18. Lord (saith David) *what am I, or what is my fathers house?* &c. though at that time the Lord took notice of his sanctification; and so indeed it is usual with the faithful, when the Lord pronounceth any mercy to them, they see no reason in themselves why the Lord should vouchsafe it: as you see when the light of the Sun shineth upon a candle, it damps the light thereof; so it is in this case, when the riches of Gods mercy shineth upon the soul, he is not so taken up in the consideration of his own works and holiness, because his heart is lifted up higher in the consideration of the grace of God: and yet let me say thus much: There is a kinde of revelation that is under the Law, Ezek. 18. 5, 6. *If a man be just, and do that which is lawfull and right, and hath not eaten upon the mountains, neither hath lift up his eyes to the idols of the house of Israel, &c. he is just, he shall surely live saith the Lord God.* Thus a man is pronounced just upon his righteousness, that is to say, so far just as the Law declares him just: if either he keep the Commandment, or if he break the Commandment, and come and bring his Sacrifice, then his sin shall be forgiven him, Lev. 5. 10, 13, 16. somewhat suitable unto what we read, Mat. 18. 23, 24, 25. &c. when the servant was required to make payment to his Lord, and had nothing to pay; he falleth down and worshipeth his Lord, saying, *Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all; for out of compassion he forgave him the debt:* just as when the Lord taketh

which hold of a man by sickness, and is ready to  
 expose him to death; then he cryeth, Lord be merciful  
 unto me, and I will become a new man, and all  
 the world shall know it, and all my friends shall see  
 it: then the Lord out of compassion delivereth him  
 from his sickness, according to Psal. 78. 34. 35.  
 &c. when God slew them, then they sought him, and  
 returned, and ~~implored~~ <sup>implored</sup> early after God; and though  
 they did but flatter him with their lips; yet he being  
 full of compassion, forgave their iniquity, and destroyed  
 them not. Thus the Lord may let men see, that he  
 doth forgive them; and no small comfort sometime  
 doth arise; and all this from some works they have  
 done: but when the Lord revealeth himself graci-  
 ously by his Spirit in our justification, he doth  
 banish the sight of our works, so that the soul doth  
 look at himself as the chiefest of all sinners, as not  
 having so much as the crawling, or creeping of any  
 work of sanctification: Yea, when the Lord reveal-  
 eth to his people their sanctification: the manifesta-  
 tion of his love unto their souls, upon that point,  
 doth take them off from the sight of their own  
 works; and move them to wonder that ever the  
 Lord should manifest himself graciously, to such as  
 they are.

Use 1. Now for the Use of this: Let me apply  
 it to teach Christians not to be afraid of the word  
 Revelation: you have heard of many that have at-  
 tended to Revelations, that have been deceived: it  
 is true; for the Devil himself, will transform  
 himself into an Angel of light: he will be  
 foisting in delusions, yea, many times when  
 the soul waiteth for the revelation of Gods mer-  
 cy, the Devil will be apt to foist in such reve-  
 lations, from whence many delusions may grow:

N

but



But yet on the other side, let not men be afraid, and say: That we have no revelation but the word: for I do believe, and dare confidently affirm, that if there were no revelation but the word, there would be no spiritual grace revealed to the soul: for it is more than the Letter of the Word that is required to it: not that I look for any other matter besides the word: But there is need of greater light, then the word of it self is able to give; for it is not all the promises in Scripture, that have at any time wrought any gracious change in any soul, or are able to beget the faith of Gods elect: true it is indeed, whether the Father, Son, or Spirit reveal any thing, it is in and according to the word: but without the work of the Spirit there is no faith begotten by any promise: the word of God, and all his works, may beget you some knowledge, if you be not mistaken in them: but to beget the faith of Gods elect, that may be able to stand against all the powers of darkness, and to crush all the temptations of that wicked one; it is not all the works of God, nor all the word of God, of it self, that is able to beget such faith; if there be any, it is but an historical faith, a dead faith that is not able to bring the soul nearer to God.

I beseech you therefore consider of it, as a mystery of God indeed, yet marvelous plain in Scripture, as I conceive: That neither the word of grace, nor all the works of grace, are able to clear up the grace of God unto the soul: it is the Spirit of God that must do it; he must reveal the grace of God, if ever we see it, otherwise it is not possible that we should be never for though we should attain unto an *Agnopeia* out of our fulness of knowledge, we shall not attain unto an *Agnopeia* in grace, fulness of faith.

As for our *works* in justification, the Lord will dash them to pieces, and cast them out of his sight: and though *faith comes by hearing*, yet it is the *Spirit* in the word, that maketh the New Testament a lively Letter; otherwise, as not the *flesh* of Christ, so nor the *word* of Christ profiteth any thing, *it is the Spirit that quickeneth*; therefore look for this *revelation* of the Spirit to shew you the need of Christ, and the Lords *offering* and *presenting* Christ unto you, and his *drawing* your hearts to believe upon him; otherwise you neither can have any faith, nor can you discern any gift of God bestowed upon you.

*Use 2.* In the second place: Let this teach and exhort us not to look for any *revelation* out of the Word; for the Spirit comes in the mouth of the Word, and the Word in the mouth of the Spirit: take heed therefore of all *Revelations* in which the Word of God is silent; for the Spirit of God will speak *Scripture* to you; when he comes, he will not bring a *new Gospel*, and *new Revelations*; but he alwaies speaks in the Word of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, which is given unto us: therefore if any Spirit shall speak, and not according to the *Word* it is but a *delusion*: rest not therefore in any *assurance*, nor *revelation*, unless thou hast a *word* for it.

*Use 3.* In the third, and last place; This may teach, and exhort us, in *Justification*, to look for no word, but such as holdeth forth some *absolute promise* of Free grace; for the Lord looketh for no *work* in our *Justification*, but the works of the Son; it is the work of his free grace to *justify the ungodly*: therefore if any man, having been in desperate anguish of soul, have built his faith upon some *Promise*

mise made unto some such work as he findeth in himself; this is no other but a *legal righteousness*: for when the Lord doth pronounce Grace in a way of Justice, he will pronounce it unto that soul, that is most ungodly, and that he himself doth justify him freely: for example, take that promise which we read, Acts 10. 43, 44. *To him give all the Prophets witness, that through his Name, whosoever believeth on him, shall receive remission of sins*: there is a promise of remission of sins unto them which believe. But was this faith in them before? Nay; but while he spake these words, the Holy Ghost fell upon all them which heard the word: and this Holy Ghost it was that did beget that faith by this Promise, whereby they did receive the Promise. So in like manner, if the Lord do promise, that *he that confesseth and forsaketh his sin, shall finde mercy*, as Prov. 28. 13. if he doth manifest his free grace in such a promise to any soul, that soul will look at his old confessions, as marvelous poor works, and will not challenge this mercy promised, by vertue of them: for when the Holy Ghost doth apply a conditional promise to the soul, he doth work the condition by the promise in the soul: therefore when the Lord comes to testifie his acceptance of our persons, it is freely of his Grace; and thou canst not build any thing thereof upon any of thy works: and if he do acknowledge our sanctification, in any word of his grace; he will let us see, that every such gift or work of grace is freely given unto us; so as that we shall be ready after all this, to say with David, *Who are we, or what are our fathers houses, that the Lord should ever accept such as we are, and such poor sacrifices as we offer unto him?*

Thus having spoken of three distinct Works,  
where-



wherein the Holy Ghost doth give himself unto the soul, to wit,

1. In a work of *Inhabitation*.
2. In a work of *Sanctification*;
3. In a work of *Revelation*;

It now remaineth, that we speak unto the fourth work, wherein the Holy Ghost gives himself unto the soul, and that is a work of *Consolation*. This is one of the great Characters of the Holy Ghost; and this the Lord Jesus doth in special ascribe unto the Spirit: Joh. 14. 16. *I will pray the Father and he shall give you another Comforter*: 1o vers. 26. and this is no other but the Spirit of Truth, Joh. 15. 26. thus doth he stile the Holy Ghost, the *Comforter*. Why? had the disciples no comforter before think you? was there no comfort in the Fathers drawing them to Christ, and revealing Christ in them? Mat. 16. 17. was there no comfort in Christ his revealing the Father to them? doubtless there is comfort in all these works: the work of the Father mentioned in Joh. 6. 44. is the same with what we read, Isa. 54. 13. *All thy children shall be taught of God, and great shall be the peace of thy children*: though it be but peace for the future, yet light is sown for the righteous herein, and gladness for the upright in heart, Plal. 97. 11. there is some ground-work of light and comfort in the Fathers work, and some sparkles of it do appear, for the Father reveals the Son; and the Son is no sooner seen, but hope is seen, for *Jesus Christ is our hope*, 1 Tim. 1. 1. and hope it self (I mean the grace of hope) is a comfortable blessing: so that the soul hath supportance in the very work of our being drawn to Jesus Christ: and moreover, the Father addeth further comfort in his justifying grace: for by it we have peace with God, Rom. 5. 1. & chap. 8. 34. it is God that justifies,

who shall condemn? such gracious supports, and more then transient tastings of his mercy; not such as hypocrites may have, but such as do more or less stay with the Saints, and people of God: so that at the least, there doth ever remain a seed of consolation in the hearts of all those, whom God hath by his Spirit drawn home unto his Son.

And when the Son receives the soul, he doth amplify this comfort: he reveals the Fathers work unto the soul, Mat. 16. 16, 17. *Blessed art thou Simon Bar-Jona, flesh and blood hath not revealed this unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven:* and Luk. 10. 20. *Rejoyce in this, because your names are written in heaven.* So that there is consolation also in the work of the Son: but you shall finde it true that it is by the Holy Ghost that both of them work, and that either of them comfort the soul, with those beginnings of consolation that afterwards break forth into more abundant riches of increase.

But what doth the Holy Ghost do more?

1. For Answer, He doth bear witness with a more abundant measure of consolation, Rom. 14. 17. *The kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost:* He doth so clearly reveal our acceptance through the righteousness of Christ, that from thence springeth peace unto the soul, which groweth up, until it passeth understanding, and bringeth us into joy unspeakable, and full of glory, 1. Pet. 1. 8. therefore he is called by way of eminency, *The Comforter*; because when he comes, he doth so clearly ratifie unto you your righteousness to be in Jesus Christ.

2. Secondly, The comfort of the Holy Ghost, is more constant and abiding; as Christ (speaking of the comfort promised unto his Apostles, Joh. 14. 27.

I will see you again, and your hearts shall rejoyce, and your joy shall no man take from you: not but that God may sometimes eclipse it, for the trial of his servants; yet ordinarily it is more constant, and leaves no faith even then more constant and firm. **Nohem. 2. 10.** The joy of the Lord is your strength: when the Holy Ghost takes in hand to comfort his people, he doth abundantly strengthen them with his consolation.

Thirdly, As the comfort of the Holy Ghost is more abundant, and constant, so it is more powerful, **Eph. 1. 19.** Behold, I send unto you the promise of the Father: every ye at Jerusalem, until you be endued with power from on high: to **ACT. 1. 8.** You shall receive power from on high, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: not by the gift of him nor by his inhabitation, nor by sanctification, nor by revelation only: but in the power of all these, that in the midst of strong oppositions, you might have strong consolation: therefore this is the ground of

the Apostle Pauls thanksgiving, **2 Cor. 1. 5.** and chap. 2. 14. For as the sufferings of Christ abound in us: so also our consolation abounds by Christ; and thanks be to God, who always causes us to triumph in Christ. Thus you see the truth of the point, that the work of consolation doth in special manner belong unto the Holy Ghost: yet for the further clearing of it, there is a Question of two to be answered: There is mention made, **Ephes. 1. 13.** 14. of the seal of the Spirit: and of the earnest of the Spirit: Therefore it may be demanded, **1. What is the seal of the Spirit?** **2. What is the earnest of the Spirit?**

**Quest. 1.** What is the seal of the Spirit? forso he is called, **Ephes. 4. 30.** Grieve not the holy Spirit, whereby you are sealed unto the day of redemption:



In likewise there is mention made both of the *seal* and *earnest* of the Spirit, 2 Cor. 1. 21, 22.

*Answer.* For answer herunto, to speak properly what I conceive the Scripture to hold forth: I take the *seal* of the Spirit to be nothing else but the Spirit itself: as the name of Christ is often put for Christ himself: for you shall not read in Scripture that it is called the *seal* of the Spirit, but they were sealed by the Spirit: He hath sealed us, and given the *earnest* of the Spirit in our hearts, 2 Cor. 1. 22. So that as the Spirit is the *ointment*, and the *earnest*: so he is also the *seal*: when the Angel mentioned Revel. 7. 3. is said to have the *seal* of the living God: it is meant of the Spirit.

*Quest.* But, how is the Holy Ghost said to be a *seal*? and in respect of what workings of his is he so called?

*Answer.* I Answer, There is a threefold respect in which he is called, The *seal*; and he doth expresse the nature of a *seal* in them all.

*Ans.* First, He doth confirm and ratifie all the gracious promises of God unto the soul, bearing witness in truth and power of them unto the soul, and thereby begetting and confirming faith in the soul; for the use of the *seal* is to confirm; and this is the principal work of the Holy Ghost, to confirm all the promises of God as an authentick *seal*. There is a place of Scripture, which being a little mis-translated, leadeth (I cannot say into a little) but into a great inconveniency, Ephes. 1. 13. *In whom after that ye believed, ye were sealed*: Calvin is much troubled about it, and so is Piscator: the truth is, it implyeth thus much, that in believing they were sealed: this is the true English of those Greek words: so that it is the Holy Ghost, that comes in

In every promise of grace wherein *Jesus Christ* is conveyed unto the soul, and he setteth it home, and confirmeth it to the soul, by begetting faith in that grace, and so setteth to his seal that it is true to thee: and hence it is, that the faith which is wrought by the *Holy Ghost*, is said to be a seal, *Joh. 3. 33.* He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal that God is true: so then, the *Holy Ghost* setteth his seal to it, when he gives us faith; and thus he is the seal, as he doth confirm all the word of Gods grace unto us: and hence it is that faith is called the spirit of faith, *2 Cor. 4. 13.* Calvin disputes this point at large, when he speaketh touching the authority of the word of God; which though it be none of the most learned, nor elegant of his works; yet I think there be so many plain arguments, that they may convince the most arrogant Atheist: yet to make him believe it you cannot, except the *Holy Ghost* set in to convince a gain-sayer; for it is the Spirit that gives the seal and confirmation of every word of the Gospel.

And to speak a little more plainly in this point; although the Apostle *John* (1 Epistle chap. 5. ver. 7, 8.) speaketh of six witnesses, that bear witness unto *Jesus Christ*; yet you shall finde this to be true, that there are none of all that do set it home unto the soul, but the *Holy Ghost* only: when the Father beareth witness, he doth it by the Spirit: *1 Cor. 2. 9, 10.* &c. God revealeth the hidden things of his will unto us by his Spirit, &c. when the Son doth shew us the Father and so setteth the soul at liberty, and easeth our consciences thereby, The Lord is that Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty: *2 Cor. 3. 17.* And it is the Spirit that setteth on his own work much more plentifully by the

the powerful efficacy of himself upon the soul, *Act. 1. 5.* and for the *water*, and the *blond*, who applyeth them? as for the *water* of sanctification, it is but a creature, and it is not in the power of any creature to beget faith; for the word of God it self cannot beget faith: can any work of God do it? no, no, it is neither the *blond* of justification, nor the *water* of sanctification that can beget faith, but the *Spirit* only: otherwise you will ever and anon suspect your faith, and your sanctification; and every Christian knows what I say. That if a man have nothing but his *works of sanctification* to trust unto, they will fail him, unless the Spirit of God do breathe in them, and testify the Lords acceptance of you: All the *works of creation* though they may convince my judgement that there is a God, yet they cannot beget lively faith in me, unless the *Holy Ghost* set in with them, for the *word of God* cannot do it, nor the *Sacraments*, though they be seals: but when are they seals? only then when the *Holy Ghost* is conveyed in them: and therefore we see why the *Holy Ghost* is called a *seal*, because he doth confirm our faith in the works, and word of God.

You will say, But may not a soul comfort himself in the former experiences of Gods mercy? True but the *Holy Ghost* must then breathe in them; and his work it is *also to bring them to remembrance*, *Ioh. 14. 26.* if he will reveal his loving kindness in these lookings of his grace, then they do come in to confirm your faith, otherwise both *word* and *works* are dead, unless the *Spirit* of God breathe in them: he it is that revealeth free grace, *justifying the ungodly*, and afterward will let you know the works of your sanctification: he teacheth, and none like him: *1 Ioh. 2. 20, 27. You have an unction from*



from the Holy One, and ye know all things, &c. and in this respect every Christian is a sealed one of God more or less; when as the Angel was sent to set the seal of God upon his servants, Revel. 7. 2, 3. he did not leave out weak Christians doubtless, but did seal all the servants of God. Christ is careful to keep his weak servants from inundations of evil; as well as others: so in Ezek. 9. 4. The mark of God is set upon all that mourn for the sins of the times: therefore in some work of this seal, the Holy Ghost is not wanting to seal all believers; otherwise thou couldest not believe, that the Father hath drawn thee to Christ, unless the Lord had revealed it; nor couldest thou believe, that the Father is thy Father, unless the Holy Ghost hath sealed thee; thou canst not know that thy faith is accepted of God, that thy sanctification is in truth, unless the Spirit of God do clear up these things unto thy soul: though thou hadst many promises before thee, yet unless the Lord by his Spirit apply them, thou canst not see thy right in them.

Object. But is not that my sin?

Ans. It is your sin; but it is such a sin, as the power of the creature cannot help you out of: for unless the Lord be pleased to discover Jesus Christ unto you, and your faith in him, and your deriving of your works from him; you will neither know your justification, nor your sanctification to be true: therefore there is ever a sealing work of Gods Spirit upon the souls of his Saints, though this may be done before the Holy Ghost come to seal you in his own proper work; for you have many gracious workings of God about you, before he come to seal his own work in your soul.

ed 2. The second work of the Spirit, in respect whereof

of

of he is called a *seal*, is his *ingraving* the *likeness* of *Jesus Christ* upon the *soul*; for the *Lord* hath *predestinated* us to be *conformed* unto the *image* of his *Son*, *Rom. 8. 29.* and how come we to be so conformed? even by the *Spirit of God*, who writeth (as it were) *Jesus Christ* in our hearts as with the *finger* of the *living God*; and hence *Christ* is *formed* in us, *Gal. 4. 19.* and this *image* of *Christ* the *Holy Ghost* writeth in us, by making us *conformable* unto the *death*, and *resurrection* of *Christ*; and unto that end, he doth breathe in both the *Sacraments*, *Rom. 6. 4, 5, 6.* for he is both a *Spirit* of *mortification*, and *visitation*, so as that through him we do not onely find sin mortified, but do live by the *faith* of the *Son of God*; and the *Spirit* it is that doth *preserve* these gifts, and *strengthen*, and *stirreth up* our *faith* to look unto *Christ*: this is another use of the *seal*, not only to *confirm*, but to *conform*; so that of his *fullness* we all receive *grace* for *grace*, *Joh. 1. 16.* and we live, yet not we, but *Christ* liveth in us; and this *seal* the *Holy Ghost* doth set on more or less in every *Christian*, but in his own proper work he doth it with more power.

103. The third work, whereby the *Holy Ghost* doth express the nature of a *seal*, is in *distinguishing* the *Saints* from other men, *Rev. 7. 2, 3.* the *servants* of *God* who are sealed; and in *sealing* them he doth *conceal* them, as a *seal* doth, so that the *world* knoweth them not, *Joh. 14. 17.* and *1 Joh. 3. 1.* we are called the *sons* of *God*; therefore the *world* knows us not, &c. and the more the *Spirit* doth *distinguish* a man from the *wicked* of the *world*, the less they do discern him to be a *gracious* man; the more *lively* *Grace* is, the more it is *hidden* from the *world*: as men grow more in *godliness*, so they grow more and more to be suspected

accepted by the world: this is *sealing work*, to distinguish, and yet to conceal: these things doth the Spirit of God, as a seal upon the hearts and consciences of his people: he *begetteth* and *confirmeth* all their *faith*, more or less: he doth *conform* them to the image of Christ more or less; he doth also *conceal*, and *distinguish* them from the world. *ps. 89. 3.*

Quest. 2. The second Question needful for the clearing of this point, is, *How is the Holy Ghost an earnest?*

Ans. For Answer, He is called an *earnest* in two respects. 1. First, As he *bindeth* the bargain between God and the soul; he doth *confirm* all the *promises* of God to us, and fasteneth them upon our hearts, & setteth our hearts with an *unmoveable faith*: God having given us his *Spirit*, doth give us all in him, for he *bindeth* our *union* with Christ, and our *relation* to the *Father*; the *Covenant* of Gods grace unto us, and us unto it; the *Gospel* to us, and us unto the *Gospel*.

2. Secondly, He is an *earnest*, as he is the first fruits of the payment: if a man give a pledge, he meaneth to take his pledge again: but if he gives money in *earnest*, he meaneth not to take that again, for it is part of the payment, and the whole is but a greater payment of the same kind: so in like manner, what is all our inhesitance? surely a fullness of the *fruition* of God the *Father*, and of *Jesus Christ*, and of the *blessed Spirit* of God; this is all our inheritance that we look for in another world: Eph. 1. 14. He is the *earnest* of our inheritance, until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory: here we have but a little portion of the Spirit,



Spirit, a little earnest-money; but this little portion is an assurance unto us, that he will make it up, until we be able to receive no more.

Use 1. Now for Application of this Point; let it first teach us, how to speak of the *seal of the Spirit*, althoſe that deſire to ſpeak the language of Canaan: no man hath part in Chriſt, but he hath the *ſeal of the Spirit* alſo; for if the Holy Ghoſt had not given thee Chriſt in this or that *promiſe*, thou couldſt never have believed it. True it is indeed, there are many Chriſtians, yea, and ſealed Chriſtians, which are not ſealed with the proper work of the Spirit, I mean with that full *conſolation*, and *uni-verſal conformity to Gods image*; every Chriſtian hath not received that *measure of power*? but every Chriſtian waiteth for it, and is ſealed by the bleſſed Spirit, having ſet home ſome word of Gods grace, wherein Jeſus Chriſt is brought unto the ſoul.

Use 2. In the ſecond place, let it teach us thus much; that it will come ſhort of bringing us unto Chriſt, if we lay claim to a *promiſe of God* by any *work of grace*, ſuch as we can have before we have the *ſeal of the Spirit*; I mean ſuch a *work of the Spirit*, as wherein he doth come in with *power* upon the ſoul above the power of the word and works of God; for they are both creatures: and unleſs the Lord come in with his immediate power, above the power of any Ordinance, all that you have received amounteth not to the *faith of Gods elect*, and unleſs it be the Spirit of God that enligheneth, we have received no *ſaving light*; and when he doth come to ſeal up Jeſus Chriſt unto our ſouls, he ever ſpeaketh in ſome *promiſe of the free grace of God*; for the Lord juſtifierh no man upon an *imperfect righteouſneſs*, but in that work doth ever declare himſelf to be juſt, and

181  
and justifier of him that is of the faith of Jesus :  
Rom. 3. 26, therefore seeing in this work, he sit-  
teth upon a throne to declare his own righteousness,  
there is no place now for our righteousness to appear ;  
hence it is, that if he justifie, it is freely by his grace,  
Rom. 3. 23. thus God dealt with Abraham, when  
he shewed him the innumerable stars of heaven, and  
told him, so shall thy seed be ; He believed God, and  
it was imputed to him for righteousness, Gen. 15. 5.  
it was the free grace of God, which he mentioneth  
unto him. But suppose the Lord should reveal a  
work unto you ( as a work there is in every  
soul that is justified ) if you should see any work  
in your soul, yet unless the Spirit of God should  
above the power of the work breathe in it, it is not  
possible that it should beget a Divine Faith ; it is  
only the work of the Spirit of God : it is he also  
that shews you your acceptance with God, and that  
manifesteth your sanctification, and makes it a sign  
unto you of your justification: otherwise neither word  
nor work can set on a promise : with power upon the  
soul, until the Holy Ghost confirm it ; it is his imme-  
diate work.

*Object.* What then ? doth the Spirit do this imme-  
diately without the word ?

*Answer.* No : if he speak peace unto the soul, he ever  
doth it in some word of promise ; and if he testifie our  
acceptance, it is in some word ; and in that respect,  
it is mediate : but he doth set on a power above the  
word, and in that respect I call it immediate ; & there-  
fore if a man shall seek to hammer out any thing  
by his own knowledge, though he may add to his  
knowledge, yet he can do nothing to the begetting  
of faith, unless the Lord come in by a power above  
the word ; and when he doth speak in any word of his

his grace, he doth not in the first place speak to you of your *own righteousness*; but first convinceth you, that you are a chief sinner: as when he said to Saul, *Why persecutest thou me?* when he sends his Spirit, it is first to convince the world of sin, (Joh. 16. 8, 9, &c.) and what? of your *Sanctification* next? no, of your *Justification* next; he will convince the world of *righteousness*; that is, of his *righteousness*; and afterward of *judgment*: and that is sometimes put for *sanctification*, Mat. 12. 20. *A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, until he bring forth judgment into victory.* But it is the Spirit that doth all this, and therefore let not men deceive themselves in any conclusions that they can make; for their *enlightened conscience* is but a *creature*; and unless the Lord come in with a greater light, then your *conscience* will afford you, all will be but lost work unto your souls; you will build but Castles in the air, which in time of temptation will vanish away.

*Use 3.* In the third place, this may teach all the servants of God, that have received in any measure of the first fruits of the Spirit, to know, that they have received an earnest of an everlasting possession; that Spirit will never leave you till you become a full vessel, and running over: if he have given you one promise, he will give you more; and if he have given you Christ, he will with him give you all things else.

*Use 4.* In the fourth and last place; it may teach us, That if we have received Christ, and our hope be in him, never to rest untill we do more fully and clearly see that the Lord is our God; untill the Holy Ghost do fill your hearts with more power, and stamp more of the Image of Christ in you: grow more and



and more sensible how dead and insufficient you are unto any thing that is good : be meek, and lowly in heart ; think meanly of your selves : you cannot ~~preach~~, you cannot *preach*, you cannot of your selves perform any Christian duty ; it is Christ that must work all our works for us : know therefore, that if you be lively and active, it is because *your life is hid with Christ in God* ; he it is that stirreth up your faith to look up unto Christ, to expect all help from his hand. Sometimes you must look to be *severed from the world* ; and the more clear the truths of God are unto you, the more they are hidden from the world ; for if a man cannot look upon a candle, how shall he look upon a torch ? and much less upon the shining Sun. Therefore it behoveth all the servants of God, to grow up in the *power* of God, and the strength of his might ; not holding forth insolency of Spirit, nor uncharitable censoriousness ; such things are far off from expressing the Spirit of Christ ; but it is the part of the servants of Christ, to be *faithful, meek, lowly, humble, and courageous* in the wayes of the Lord ; and when you have done all, be contented to be counted *the off-scouring of the world* ; as 1 Cor. 4. 9. for it must be the part of all that fear God, to take heed that you give none occasion to any to speak evil of us : for if we do consider the great hope of our *calling*, how should it cast holy shame upon our faces, that we walk so unworthy of our calling ! for if there be any work of God upon our hearts, it is no transient work : if God begin, *He will perfect untill the day of Christ* : The work of Grace is an incessant work ; but as in the first *creation*, the Spirit of God *hatched* upon the face of the waters, till the work of *Creation* was perfected ; so doth the Lord by his Spirit in his Saints ; he doth

not leave *hatching* in their hearts till he hath separated *light* from *darkness*, and made every thing fruitful in the soul. We must not rest therefore in former weak beginnings; but if we be born of God, and under a Covenant of grace, we must look to grow up in all well pleasing unto God, that we may not be strangers to any of all the heavenly works of the grace of God, but that we may grow up to abound in fruitfulness in them all.

Thus having explained, how the Lord gives himself in a Covenant of grace unto *Abraham*, and to his seed; we now come unto the second part of the Doctrine; which is, that he received *Abraham* and his seed to be a peculiar people unto himself; which although we have spoken somewhat unto in the opening of the point, let us further premise these three things, before we come to the Use of it.

1. First, That the Lord did take *Abraham*, and his seed to be a peculiar people unto himself.

2. Secondly. How did he so take them to be his people?

3. Thirdly, Who are meant by those, Whom he did so take, to make them a peculiar people unto himself?

1. For the first of these, That he did so take *Abraham* and his seed, &c. we finde it plain in Deut. 7. 6, 7, 8. The Lord thy God hath chosen thee, to be a special people unto himself, &c. and ver. 8. Because the Lord loved you, and because he would keep the oath which he had sworn unto your fathers. The like we read in 2 Sam. 7. 23, 24. Thou hast confirmed to thy self thy people Israel, to be a people unto thee for ever; and thou Lord, art become their God: and this mercy doth

doth he magnifie toward them, when they had no thoughts of him; but as he sometimes called his Apostles, when they were mending their nets, so he called his people Israel, when they were making bricks in Egypt, then he said to Pharaoh, Let my people go; and again, If thou slay my son, my first born, I will slay thy son, thy first born; and as he sometime took Abraham himself out of Caldea: so he took his seed out of Egypt, that they might serve him in the Wilderness.

Quest. 2. Now secondly, If you shall ask, how the Lord called them?

Ans. I answer, chiefly two waies.

1. First, By solemn outward Covenant; and that partly in the loyns of Abraham: and partly in mount Sinai; and yet more solemnly in the plains of Moab, Deut. 29. for that was a Covenant of Grace wherein the Lord promised to circumcise their heart, and the heart of their seed. Deut. 30. 6.

2. And secondly, In one word, by this Covenant he doth draw them into union with himself, and with his Son: from whence it comes to pass, that we have communion with him, both relative, in adoption, and justification; and positive, in sanctification, and in fullness of time, perfect glorification.

Quest. 3. In the third place, What is meant by Abraham, and his seed? doth God call all the seed of Abraham into a Covenant of Grace with himself?

Ans. The answer is shortly this, Abraham doth here principally stand as the father of the faithful, and so received Circumcision as the Father of the faithful, not only of such as were Circumcised, but also of such as were uncircumcised. The Covenant he received when he was uncircumcised; and the seal when he was circumcised, that he might be



be the father of the faithful among Jewes and Gentiles: and all the Jewes are not the seed of Abraham, but the children of the promise are counted for the seed: for they are the seed unto whom the promises are made; and he saith it not, unto thy seeds, as of many: but To thy seed, as of one, even Christ, Gal. 3. 16. so that unto Christ, and unto all those that have the seed of Christ in them, is this Covenant made.

*Object.* You will say unto me, But is it made unto the carnal seed also? have they no portion in the Covenant of grace; was not Ishmael circumcised as well as Isaac? and is it not said, unto them were committed the covenants of God? Rom. 9. 4. so that both the Covenants were committed to them that fell away from God: and hath not God said to those that were circumcised, Though Moses and Samuel stood before me, yet my mind could not be towards this people? and the Lord rejecteth them, Jer. 15. 1. and 6. ult. and 7. 29. and yet, these (whom God rejecteth) were made partakers of the seal of the Covenant: would God call them to the seal, and not to the Covenant? would he call them to prophane the Covenant? the point is weighty: shortly and plainly to speak something to it.

1. First, they had their part in the Covenant of grace: this they had, that they were all called to the solemn receiving of the covenant, Deut. 29. 10. to 15. Ye all stand this day before the Lord your God, &c. that thou shouldst enter into covenant with the Lord thy God, &c. this was the Covenant of grace: now that are all the carnal seed of Christian Parents, called into the outward fellowship of the Covenant.

*Object.* But why would God call them to the outward

ward fellowship of the covenant, and seal of it, and mean while not give them the blessing, and kernel of the Covenant? this is weighty and considerable; how it standeth with the faithfulness of God.

*Ans.* For answer, The Blessings of the Covenant are not far from them: for there are *two* sorts of blessings. Some do consist in the outward letter of the Ordinances; the Gospel of grace, the Sacraments, and seals of it; and sundry common gifts of the Spirit that are plentifully dispensed in the fellowship of the Church; besides a liberal and bountiful use of the creatures; for they are all serviceable to the People of God: and all these things do flow from the Covenant of grace, which God hath made with their Fathers. When as Abraham had understood that God would establish the Covenant with Isaac, and thereupon made a sad prayer unto God, that Ishmael might live in his sight. Gen. 18. 18, 20. the Lord answereth him; As for Ishmael, I have heard thee; behold, I have blessed him, and will make him fruitful, &c. and (which is wonderful) he had the liberty of all the Ordinances until he cut himself off from them. Unto this Covenant belong those gifts, which the Lord bestows on men from the blood of Christ, Heb. 10. 29. so that is not a meer blank, for by it here are sundry spiritual, and outward blessings; the patience and bounty of God is abundantly poured out upon carnal seed of Christian Parents, as in the wilderness, when the displeasure of God was ready to kindle against that carnal generation, and he was ready to cut them off; he remembered the covenant of his mercy to Abraham, and oft times spared them: so that if you see much patience extended to the Children of Christian Parents, and many

gifts bestowed upon them, whereby they become very serviceable sometimes in the *Commonwealth*, sometimes in the *Church*; know, that all these things spring from the *Covenant* of God with their *Fathers*.

*Objection*. I, but if the very life and kernel of the blessing be wanting; if *Ismael* do not live in *Jesus Christ*, what will all these blessings do him good? will they not aggravate his damnation?

*Answer*. For answer, munde you this, that the Lord may be justified; he doth not only call them to *Church liberty*, and *fellowship*; nor only bestow upon them sundry gifts of grace, and great *honours*, and manifold *preservation* from evil: but likewise he doth offer them the *sure mercies of David*: for so God doth distinguish the *sure mercies of the Covenant*, *Mat. 23. 2*. Encline your ear, and come unto me, hearken, and your soul shall live, and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the *sure mercies of David*: wherein you see the Lord putteth it upon such terms, that if the soul come not by it, it is because he would not: not that any can come when they will as by the power of their own will; but this the Lord will leave upon the children of *Christian Parents*, that they shall not say, that God forsook them, until they have forsaken him; and that, when there lay no necessity upon them, but voluntarily they did despise the grace of the *Covenant*: for do but observe the causes wherefore the Lord hath discovenanted the children of gracious Parents.

1. The first that ever fell off from the *Covenant* of grace made with *Abraham*, it was *Ismael*; and what was the ground of it? he mocked *Isaack*, *Gen. 21. 9, 10*. what mocking was it? in regard of humane quality? no, no; it was a plain persecution, and



and that implies such a persecution as was cast upon him in respect of the Covenant of grace made with him; as if he should say, *Here is the child of Promise!* or the like, insomuch that *Sarah* could not endure he should tarry any longer in the house; for this was not *humane frailty*, but *humane insolency* against the Covenant; whereas happy he, if he might have fallen under the wing of it.

2. The second that you read of, who fell from the Covenant, fell not upon those terms; but the love of *worldly sensual blessings* did choak the affections of *Esaú* toward the Covenant of grace, which was the chief blessing of the first born in the days of *Abraham* and *Isaac*; but he coming in hungry, selleth his *birthright* for a mess of red pottage, Gen. 25. 31. &c. Thus *Esaú* despised his birthright: so this sort of children despise the grace of God, not out of a malicious frame of spirit, but they are choaked with the cares of this world; and the best seed that was sown in them, becomes unfruitful; and this is the case of all the good husbands of the world that despise the Covenant of grace; for when once a man is taken up with the profits and pleasures of this life, he then cares not a rush for the Covenant of grace: mount *Sion* is not now commodious for him, so prophanely do they undervalue the Covenant of grace in comparison of sensual lusts: and do men thus fall from the Covenant of grace, because it is a duty above the power of nature? no, no, the very common gifts they had, might have restrained the one of these from *making*, &c. the other from *selling his birthright* for a mess of pottage: it is evident that the children of Christian Parents, when as they come to fall off from God, they do not fall upon such things as they are not able to prevent; but

neither

either they scorn and persecute the things of God, or else they prefer sensual lusts before them.

3. A third way whereby the children of Christian Parents fall from the Covenant of grace, is a self-confident cleaving unto those gifts of grace, which by the Covenant they have received: besides these causes of their falling from the Covenant of grace, I have observed no more in Scripture nor have I found any more in mine own experience. When men are invested with many spiritual blessings; sweetly indowed with many sprinklings of the blood of the Covenant; whereby they come to be great in knowledge, and sometime excel in a spirit of prayer, and some are good at one thing, and and some at an other; and being full of such gifts, it may easily come to pass that they may grow so confident of these, that they will not subject themselves unto the righteousness of God in Christ Jesus. And this was the rejection of the whole house of Israel, Rom. 10. 3. They being ignorant of Gods righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God: and hence the Covenant of grace is unto them turned into a Covenant of works; they are now become the children of the bond-woman, and not the children of the free-woman: for they that have their faith in themselves, and not in Christ, they fall under a Covenant of works. So that (mind you) the Lord is just and righteous in all these his dispensations!

I said before, God did receive Abraham and his seed into this Covenant: I mean the faithful seed; and they are received into the second sort of blessings of the Covenant, which are truly saving: for the Lord receives them into inward fellowship with his

son, so as that they shall be justified, sanctified, and glorified. But are the carnal seed then rejected? no, but they partake in many bounties of God, and grow up and live in his sight; what? in the enjoyment of outward blessings only? no, of spiritual blessings also. I, but the Lord gives them not the spiritual blessing of saving grace by the Covenant: doth he not? and why is it? not because he doth not offer it to them: but because they fall off from it upon such terms, wherein there lay no necessity upon them, that they should so fall off: *Ishmael* needed not have mocked *Isaac*; *Esau* needed not have sold his birth-right for a mess of pottage: never let them pretend the necessity of corrupt nature; corrupt nature presseth no such necessity upon us, to sell away such blessings upon such terms. And for otheers that trusted in their own righteousness, had not the Lord convicted them, that it was not their own righteousness that could save them? did not *David* say, *If thou Lord mark iniquity, Lord who shall stand?* Psal. 130. 3. and *in thy sight shall no flesh living be justified*, Psal. 143. 2. so that, it is not the blindness of mans nature that excuseth, but this flows from a malignant, and affected self confidence; therefore now they are justly disinherited: for the Jews were not rejected until it was made plain to them, that their righteousness would not stand before the Lord; therefore saith the Apostle, *Act. 13. 46. It was necessary that the word of God should first have been spoken unto you; but seeing you put it from you, &c.* & he had said before, *They contradicted and blasphemed*; and why was it necessary that the word should be spoken unto them? truly, that God might be faithful in his Covenant; for if all the children of Christian Parents, may not have liberty in the means of grace, then the Lord should be wanting to his



his *Covenant*: so that if they be *Jews* by nature, the Lord is bound by *Covenant*, that they shall not for want of means perish: nor upon such grounds as are far above the *nature* of creatures to reach unto: for though it be above the power of the creature to *repent* and *believe*, yet it is not above the power of *nature* to *abstain* from *prophaneness* and *malignity*, and such strong *confidence* in their legal *righteousness*; therefore doth he call them to *Church-privileges*, and *common gifts* and *graces*, things that are above the power of nature to reach unto: and he doth also *preserve* them from many evils, and *tenders* unto them the *sure mercies of the Covenant*: but if they will *maligne* it, and cast it behinde their backs, and choose other things before it; such degenerate children of godly Parents, their *bloud* shall be upon their own heads.

Use 1. The life hereof in the first place, may serve to *justify* the *righteousness of God*, in the *confusion* of the children of Christian Parents: if thou seest any child of the godly perish, write upon him, He is either a *persecutor*, or a *worldling*, or a *presumptuous hypocrite*; otherwise he had been an heir of grace: The spirit of God dealeth fairly, and sweetly, and comfortably with them: whence it is that they are often times sweetly *trimmed up* with many good *gifts* and *parts*, that you would wonder to see how forward and dexterous they are in their places: and how comes this? is it not from the *faithfulness* of Gods *Covenant*, that we might see and say, That on Gods part, there was no want unto his salvation, but it was his own ungracious *gracelessness*, that cast off grace in the means of it? let *Ishmael* perish, and *Esa* perish, and all civil *justiciaries* perish; and their *bloud* will be upon their own heads, the Lord and

and his throne is guiltless, it's not for want of grace offered unto them: for though he had not purposed to save them merely of grace, yet he meant to let them see, that he did not only deal *justly* with them, but also *graciously* in some kind. What a warning should this be to the children of godly Parents! Take heed what you do; *Ishmael* had a godly Father, and *Esau* both godly Father and Mother; therefore blesse not your selves in that. Take heed also that you rush not upon another rock: for you will be ready to say, Notwithstanding the fair *Covenant*, which I am under, I cannot have *grace* unless God *work* it in me: stand not with God upon those terms; for either God will bring you home unto himself, or else you shall fall upon such terms, as that God will take you by the throat one day, and make it appear that you did *forsake* the *Covenant* of grace, upon such grounds, as many a Reprobate in Hell would never have parted with it upon the like: either you do *maligne* the grace of God, or are *prophane*, or else you stand upon your *own* *righteousness*, and stablish that; and then your heart begins to rise against your parents: and you think your self wiser then seven men that can render a reason; or if you break not out upon these terms, then you will begin to see that God hath enlightened your mind, & to seize upon your heart; and then you see that you can *do something*, you can *pray*, and you can *hear with profit*, and the like: and hereupon you come to build an undoubted *hope* of salvation; you believe upon this that your soul is wrapped up in a bundle of life and peace: and if any man come to shake your foundation, you are like a stone-wall that beateth back all: therefore if thus you fall off, the Lord and his throne is guiltless, and you are justly miserable:

it

it is the *bloud* of the *Covenant*, that did *sanctifie* you; but it will not save you, because you did not look to be *justified* by it: so that as you have *despised* the *Covenant* of God, you are now cut off from the saving *fellowship* of it, which else the Lord had called you to enjoy. It was not the *Jews* crucifying the Lord of life and glory in their ignorance, that cut them off from God; for notwithstanding that, Christ prayed for them, Luk. 23. 34. *Father, forgive them, they know not what they do*: but when they grow *malignant*, and *despise*, and *contradict*, and *blaspheme*, Act. 13. 40, 45, 46. and *put off from them the word of life*, now they are cast off. Therefore let all the children of Christian Parents understand it, and the danger of it, do not think that you shall be saved, because you are the children of Christian Parents, but take heed of *scorning* of Religion, and of *high-prizing* the *world*: and if you be forward in *spiritual gifts*, take heed of *blesting* your selves in them: for if you have any thing of *your own* to build upon, you will in time tread under foot the *bloud* of the *Son of God*, *wherewith* you were *sanctified*, if you be not justified by it: *work out* therefore *your salvation* with *fear* and *trembling*, otherwise by one means or other you will fall off from God, upon such base and unworthy terms, whereby it will appear that the Lord is *just* in *rejecting* you, and you justly left in a state of perdition.

*Object.* You will say, But what shall we think of *Infants*?

*Answer.* Peter Martyr saith, If they die when they are *Infants*, they are certainly saved. I cannot say it so fully, nor have I any thing against it: this I can say, That they are *holy*, for so saith the Scripture, and therefore they are in the *Covenant*



nam generally : sometimes Parents may cut off the free passage of their Covenant from their seed: though God give them one child and another, they are not greatly sensible what need the poor Infant standeth in of a Covenant of grace: they do not believe for their children, nor humble themselves in respect of them ; and then no wonder if the child miscarry through the unbelief of his Parents. Otherwise I do not know whether ever God reject any upon other grounds, then what we have already laid down.

Use 2. In the second place, for Use, It teacheth all the servants of God, that are *under the Covenant*, to be careful to bring up their children under the wing of the Covenant : it may be some of you have sold away great estates from them ; these were but the appurtenances of the birth-right : but if you have parted with great inheritances for the liberty of the Ordinances, you do your children no wrong: for as ever you desire that they may have a share in the Covenant, bring them under the Ordinances of the Covenant, for *faith comes by hearing*, Rom. 10. 17. *Received you the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith ?* Gal. 3. 2. and this is the door of the Covenant, *Jesus Christ believed on*, Joh. 10. 7, 9. Act. 14. 27. therefore whatsoever inheritances you sell, if it were the inheritance of a Kingdom, bring them to the Ordinances of God, if they cannot be brought to them : and so you have done your part ; and then if your childrens blood be upon their own heads ; through their own forsaking of the Covenant, the Lord is *guiltless*, and his Covenant *guiltless* ; they have forfeited their

their birth-right, which is not to be bought again for many worlds.

Use 3. In the third place, seeing that, as the receiver the faithful seed of *Abraham* into the Covenant of his grace, and in like manner taketh not only you, but all of yours by vertue of the Covenant: and seeing that the Lord doth in giving himself, give us all his *Persons, Attributes, Ordinances, Providences*; for he is the Lord of hosts, and therefore all that is Gods is ours also: It will follow semblably, that we must be as God is, and our children as his children; and our servants as his servants; and our wits, and parts, and authority, and power, and times must all be for God, and not for our selves: moreover, all that is in our Churches is for God, Cant. 7. ult. *At our gates are all manner of pleasant fruits both new and old, which I have laid up for thee O my beloved.*

Now from hence two things follow.

1. First, Here is a ground for family-duties; for if all that I have must be the Lords (for he takes me as he gives himself) then it is for us to give up all our relations unto him, as much as lies in us: we can do nothing but set them before the Lord; but it will be requisite that we should constrain them to duty, pray with our children and servants, teach them the will of God; restrain them from wickedness; I know *Abraham*, saith the Lord, *That he will command his children, and his household after him, and they shall keep the way of the Lord, &c.* Gen. 18. 18. and the Lord commandeth Parents to bring up their children in the nurture and admonition of the Lord, Ephes. 6. 4. we must therefore teach them to know the God of their Fathers, as *David*, 1 Chron. 28. 9. *And thou Solomon my son, know thou the God of thy father,*  
and

and serve him with a perfect heart, and with a willing  
 mind, &c. and so old Lois and Eunice were careful  
 to train up Timothy in the knowledge of the Scrip-  
 tures from a child : this the Lord requireth of us ;  
 as ever we look to have right in his Son, he will  
 have right in our sons : if we have right in his Spirit,  
 he hath right in our spirit ; if you have any right in  
 his servants, he hath right in your servants : and  
 therefore use the means to draw them home to him,  
 and leave the blessing unto the Lord : but if Parents  
 be watchless in conveying the blessing to their chil-  
 dren, and children careless in receiving it ; God is  
 faithful, and his Covenant faithful, though they fall  
 short of it.

2. Secondly, This also follows, that as God be-  
 trusteth us with any gifts, or parts, or talents :  
 with honour, wealth, health, strength, beauty,  
 liberty, or what else soever : if the Lord have given  
 us any blessing, it is wholly his, for we must be un-  
 to God, as we would have him be unto us ; and there-  
 fore the Lord took it unkindly from his people, Hos.  
 2. 8. That the corn, and wine, and oyl, and silver and  
 gold, which he had given them, they prepared for Baal-  
 Israel is an empty vine, when he bringeth forth fruit  
 unto himself, Hos. 10. 1. so likewise he taketh it  
 ill, Ezek. 16. 20, 21. that they took his sons, and  
 his daughters and sacrificed them unto Moloch : so some-  
 times men count it a gentile thing to train up their  
 children to idleness, and other vanities ; whereas in  
 truth it is as if they trained them up to Moloch :  
 and this the Lord doth abhor, and will sadly require  
 it in his own time. If therefore we must give  
 up our selves and ours unto God ; then here  
 is a foundation for family duties, and also to  
 improve our selves, and all that we have, wholly  
 to



to advance the glory of the grace of God in Jesus Christ: else we pluck asunder the Covenant of grace.

*Use 4;* In the fourth place, If the Lord in this Covenant receive us to be a peculiar people unto himself, something we are to learn in the manner of the performance of all holy duties; for as we are still to be doing in the use of means to help our knowledge, and faith; so in all let us still be expecting from the Lord to lay hold upon us and ours; and to receive us: for our hope standeth more in Gods receiving us, then in our giving our selves unto him; rest not therefore in all the good means that you use, for that will not hold unless the Lord be pleased to receive us, and ours. Joh. 6. 37. *All that the Father gives me shall come unto me: so that unless the Lord give our children to his Son, though we devote them to him, it is a question whether he will take them or no: look we up therefore unto the Lord, that he may take them graciously unto himself: the Prophet exhorteth Israel to return unto the Lord, Hos. 14. 1, 2. But how shall they return? not unless the Lord take away their iniquity, and receive them graciously; and thus the Prophet teacheth them to pray: so that they do not stand upon their own reformatiōns, nor look to this & that which they can do; no, no, take with you words, and say, Take thou away our iniquity; otherwise we shall never get it out: he also must receive us graciously, and so shall we render unto him our selves, and all that we can do. This is the way of the Covenant of grace; whatsoever duties the Lord requireth to be done on our parts, let us look unto him in all to receive us and ours, otherwise we and ours shall soon turn our backs upon God, and upon his Covenant which*  
he

he hath so graciously invited us unto in Jesus Christ.

We now come to the third and last Branch of the Doctrine ; which is, That *the Lord took the chief of Abrahams seed, the Lord Jesus Christ, to be the mediator and surety of the Covenant between God and Abraham* : this is expressed, Gal. 3. 16. *To Abraham and his seed were the promises made : he saith not, And to his seeds, as of many, but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ* : so that he is the chiefest of the seed with whom the Covenant is established, as also the Prophet *Isaiah* testifieth, chap. 42. 6. and 49. 8. *I will give thee for a covenant of the people, and a light of the Gentiles*, and the Apostle speaketh fully, when he saith, Heb. 8. 6. *that he is the mediator of a better covenant : and a surety of the Covenant*. Heb. 7. 22. Christ is therefore the chiefest of the seed, and the *Mediatour and Surety of the Covenant*.

Now a Mediatour he is between both parties ; partly in respect of his *person*, and partly in respect of his *Office*.

1. In respect of his person, as he is God and man, he is a *fit person* to be the ground of our *union* with God, and to maintain our *communion* with him : for what is a Mediator ? but a middle person to bring two persons, that are at difference into one ? now Christ as he is God-man, is most fit for this work.

1. First, To be the ground of our *union* : for being God-man, he hath united both the differing natures into one ? so he is a middle person, and fit to be the foundation of our *union*, and therefore he is called *Immanuel*, Isa. 7. 14. *That is, God with us*.

2. Secondly, By his *person* he is fit to maintain

our *communion*; and there are two things requisite unto that:

1. First, The removal of all offences; and Christ is most fit for that: for as he is the Son of *man*, he is most fit to suffer all punishment due unto sin; and therefore as *man* he became sin for us, that we might become the righteousness of God in him, 2 Cor. 5. ult. And as he is God, so he is fit to overcome sin, and to prevail against the wrath of God.

2. Secondly, He is fit to communicate all the good things of God unto us: as God, he is fit to bestow upon us all spiritual comforts, and heavenly gifts and blessings: as *man*, he knows what is most fit for the spirit of man, and so he is fit to communicate unto us all the good things of God: he hath suffered himself, and hath been emptied, and so he is fit to succour such as are emptied, Heb. 2. 17, 18. thus he is a fit Mediatour in regard of his Person.

2. Secondly, He is fit to be a Mediatour in respect of his Offices; he is a Priest, a Prophet, and a King; and in all these Offices he doth properly, and lively exercise the Office of a Mediatour.

1. First, As a Priest, He doth offer Sacrifice for us, Heb. 9. 12. even himself, Heb. 10. 10. He gives his life a ransom for many, Mat. 20. 28. and he doth not only thus give all this, but apply it also unto us, as it belongs unto a Mediator for to do. And as a Priest, he doth sit at Gods right hand, and makes intercession for us, Rom. 8. 34. and if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father which is Christ the righteous; by him God reconcileth the world unto himself, 2 Cor. 5. 19. thus he taketh away the sins of the world, Joh. 1. 29, and becomes a propitiation for us, Rom. 3. 24, 25. these things he doth as he is a Priest.



2. Secondly, As he is a *Prophet*, he *teacheth us all things*. Acts 3. 22. whatsoever things he hath done and suffered for us, those things as a *Prophet* he teacheth us.

3. Thirdly, *As a King*, he doth *apply* all this grace unto us, *subduing* us by his Spirit unto himself, and all the *creatures* unto us. God by him as a *Mediator*, doth *bring us on* effectually unto himself by the mighty power of his Word and Spirit, and *keepeth us* with himself in *spotless communion* unto his heavenly kingdom. These *Offices* give him *power and authority* to do it, as also *faithfulness*, and *mercy*, according unto his tender compassion on our necessities. Thus we see how the *Lord Jesus* is a *Mediatour*.

In particular, he is a *Mediatour* of the *Covenant* between God and us, and that in a threefold respect.

1. First, Because he is the *Messenger* of the *Covenant*: thus he is called, *Mal.* 3. 1. he did first *publish* it unto our first *Parents*, *Gen.* 3. 15. and unto *Abraham*, and by all the holy *Prophets*, and in the daies of his flesh, and by the *Apostles*, and their successors, unto the end of the world.

2. Secondly, He is called the *Mediatour* of the *Covenant*. as he doth *ratifie* and *confirm* the *Covenant* by a threefold seal.

1. First, By his *bloud*: for a *Testament* is confirmed by the death of him that made it, *Heb.* 9. 15, 16, 17. he is the *mediatour* of the new testament, that by means of death, &c. that they which are called, might receive the promise of eternal inheritance. He made it sure on Gods part, and on our parts he doth seal it up with his *bloud*, that it might be confirmed unto all Generations: and as no man maketh a Te-

stament after a Testatours death, so this is unalterable.

2. Secondly, As he hath confirmed it by his blood, so also by his Spirit, Ephes. 1. 13, 14. &c. 4. 30. *Grieve not the holy Spirit, whereby you are sealed to the day of redemption.* Christ is the *Angel* that ascended out of the East, having the *seal of the living God*, Rev. 7. 2, 3. And look as it was the manner of the Priest of old, to *sprinkle the blood of the Covenant* upon the *book of the law*, and upon the *people*: so doth the Lord Jesus *besprinkle us*, and that which *is taught us*, with his blood and Spirit, and thereby begetteth the experience of the favour of God in our hearts, and *sealeth* it up unto us.

3. Thirdly, He doth *seal* it by the *seals* of the *Covenant*, which are *Baptism*, and the *Lords Supper*: so it is here said, *He gave him the covenant of circumcision, which was a seal of the righteousness of faith*; instead whereof he hath given us *Baptism*. And by the *Lords Supper* he *sealeth* it; for that is the *blood of the new Testament*, Mat. 26. 28. by all these means he doth *confirm* the *Covenant*, Dan. 7. 27.

3. Thirdly, He is not only the *Publisher*, and *confirmer*, but also the *Prince*, and *Head* of it; for you shall see that in all *Covenants* there are some that are *Princes* of the *Covenant*, as we read, Dan. 11. 22. where speaking of the league between *Egypt* and *Assyria*, he makes mention of the *Princes* of the *Covenant*. So in this respect the Lord Jesus is called the *Covenant* it self: *Isai.* 42. 6. 49. 8. as being the *Head* and *Prince* of it; and that implyeth two or three things:

1. First, if he be the *Prince* of the *Covenant*, then all the *Covenant* is *first made with him*, Gal. 3. 16.

To Abraham, and to his seed, even unto Christ: and to the Church his mystical body in him, and under him; and therefore all the promises are in him yea and in him amen: 2 Cor. 1. 20. that is to say, all the Promises, and all their conditions are fulfilled in him; as he saith, *It behoveth us to fulfil all righteousness.* Mat. 3. 15.

2. Secondly, He doth inherit the blessings of the Covenant, so far as his blessed nature is capable of them; he hath received the crown of inheritance of all the blessings both of this life and of another, Mat. 28. 18. he sitteth at Gods right hand; having led captivity captive, he treadeth down Satan under his feet; therefore,

1. First, He hath fulfilled all the conditions of the covenant; as this is one part of the Covenant, *The redeemer shall come out of Sion, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob*; as the Apostle, Rom. 11. 26. expoundeth the words of the Prophet, *Isai. 59. 20.* for he fulfilleth in us all the conditions of the Covenant: he it is that turneth us to the Lord, and undertaketh to do all things in us and for us.

2. Secondly, He doth communicate the blessings of the Covenant to us, having himself exactly fulfilled all the Conditions of them.

3. He doth apply the comfort of the Promises unto us; and having done all these things, he leadeth us still to wait upon him for further and further blessings in his Ordinances: Thus we have seen in particulars how the Lord Jesus is the Mediatour of the covenant. He is the Publisher of it, the confirmer of it, by his blood, by his Spirit, by the seals of the Covenant: he is the Prince of it, and hath received all the promises from God; they are accomplished in him, he hath fulfilled all the conditions



conditions, and received all the blessings, and applied them unto us, and wrought all things in us, and for us, and still leadeth us on unto further and further fellowship with himself.

*Use 1.* For the use of this point; in the first place, it is of refutation unto the *Popish Doctrine*, that hath devised other *Mediatours* besides *Jesur Christ*: they come unto God in the *mediation* of *Saints* and *Angels*, and pray to them, to pray for them in Heaven; and look that by the vertue of their prayers they shall be saved; and whereas the Scripture is plain, 1 Tim. 2. 5. there is *one Mediatour between God and man, the man Christ Jesus*; yea, (say they) one Mediatour of *Redemption*, but many of *Intercession*; whereas (mind you) it is the work of a *Mediatour*, not only to do that which may prevail for the obtaining of peace; but he must apply it also, or else he hath not brought us unto *union* and *communion* with the *Father*. And when they make *intercession* unto *Angels* for the vertue and merit of their prayers, it doth evacuate the *mediation* of *Jesur Christ*: for bring in other Mediatours, and you weaken him in his Office. A sign they trust not in him, and therefore are accursed when they put confidence in other things, Jer. 17. 5.

*Ans.* But you will say, Do we not pray the *Saints on earth* to pray for us?

*Object.* It is true we do so: and Christ hath bidden us, and given us patens to pray one for another: but if we in this Country should pray to a friend in *England* to pray for us, it were *Idolatry*: *Paul* indeed doth write unto the Churches to pray for him, but not unto the *Saints* or *Angels* in *heaven*.

2. We do not depend upon their prayers, that by the

the merit of them they should prevail: but we look at it only as a way, wherein the Lord calleth us to wait upon him: so as that when we have done desiring, we look for all blessing from *Jesus Christ*, even then when we beg the prayers of our friends. When as God was angry with the friends of *Job*, because they falsely accused *Job*, chap 42. 7. 8. he bids them take a sacrifice, and go to *Job*, and he shall pray for you; for him will I accept: but must they now trust upon *Job*? or upon his acquaintance with God? no verily, but upon the Lord *Jesus*, who was held forth by the Sacrifice. So that though we crave the help of our brethrens prayers, yet the Lord doth not allow us, to make our friends *Mediatours* between Christ and us; we look not for any thing from them, but from the Lord *Jesus Christ* alone in that way. Now they look at *Mary* as able to command the Lord *Jesus*, (*Thou Mater Filium*, command thy Son,) and when they pray to this Saint and that Saint, they look that the right and merit, and efficacy of their prayers shall carry all an end: whereas they need a *Mediatour* themselves; and therefore they cannot by their own right be *Mediatours* unto us. But that we might the better understand the mystery of iniquity: do not they make the *Saints* and *Angels* the *Mediatours* of their *Redemption* also? what is the ground of the *Popish* indulgences? have not they a treasure of *Church-merit* which they boast of? and therefore have they power, as they say, to grant pardons, and to apply the merits of the *Saints* unto this and that soul: now (mind you) he which is a *Mediatour* of the pardon of my sins, is a *Mediatour* of redemption, and justification; and this is the dangerous gulfe into which the *Popish Religion* linketh many millions of souls.

Use 2. The second Use, Is of *Instruction* how to make an *holy use* of all the *gifts* of Gods grace, and *duties* of Gods worship; this Doctrine will properly hold it forth; for here is as dangerous a rock for our souls to be split upon, as is amongst them: for we also may be subject to the like danger, in making our *own righteousnesses* our *mediators*, as they be in making their *prayers*, and *merits* of their *Saints* their *Mediators*: if we shall make any *graces* in our hearts the ground of our *union* with God, we have forgotten that *Jesus Christ* became God and man, and that he only is a *fit person* to remove all *offence*, and to *communicate* all *good things* from God unto us: if we shall say within our selves, Were I but thus and thus *humbled*, the Lord would accept me, and all the blessed promises would be mine: if I could but *pray* as such a Christian can, then I know the Lord would accept me. This may be a piece of *refined Popery*, but it is *Popery* at the very bottom: if we look unto our *graces*, or *duties*, to bring us unto *union* with Christ; or if we think that by the *right* of *them*, *communion* shall be maintained, we have forgotten our *Mediator Jesus Christ*, God and man; for if he be our *Mediator*, he doth work both these for us: these things cannot bring us unto Christ, for they all flow from him; if therefore we have no other *union* with Christ, then that which flows from *them*; we are not united unto this very day. But you will say, Cannot our *gifts*, and *works* maintain this *union* when it is true? if they can uphold it, they are in part *Mediators*: that they do uphold it by *merit*, no Protestant will say: neither is there any right, or power in them to do this; and therefore to trust in them, is to put confidence in the arm of flesh; and though it be not so gross as

*Popery*



Popery, yet it tends unto the like dishonour of *Jesus Christ*. It was a faithful saying of the Apostle *Peter*, and worthy of all acceptation, when they saw the people ready to attribute much unto their holiness, Acts 3. 12. &c. *Ye men of Israel, (saith Peter) why look ye so earnestly on us, as if we by our power, or holiness, had made this man to walk? the God of Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus, &c.* so it is not in the power of the best spiritual gifts or works, to make a creeple go: much less is it in their power to make a feeble soul stand upright; but the God of our fathers glorifieth his Son *Jesus*, in doing all this work for us: for he is our only Mediatour of reconciliation, redemption, and intercession; and if we look for any such vertue, power, or right in any other means under heaven, we deprive *Christ* of the Office of a Mediatour. There is an Opinion, as I hear, stirring in our native Country, that though none of our works give us merit, right, or power to reach the blessing, yet they give us fitness. Now truly this is but an English word; in Latine we call it congruity; and this the Papists come unto, that when they be driven hard unto it, they will acknowledge that we have no merit of condignity, but only merit of congruity: therefore in truth it is plain Popery in English: it is true indeed, there is a fitness, but it lies not in doing; it is such a fitness, as whereby the soul judgeth it self unworthy of any grace: and now the creature being emptyed of it self, is fit to receive mercy from God; it is now fit to receive all from *Christ*. Consider therefore, I beseech you, what kind of use God calleth us to make of all gifts, and works of grace; do not think we cry down sanctification, because we do not put it into *Christ's Mediatourship*, because we do not shut *Christ* out of heaven, and

and out of his Office by it ; for we give it his honour : if we give it this honour of *mediation*, we cannot come to God, but we must be united : you will say We cannot be *united*, till by *faith* we have *uniting*. Is *faith* then a *Mediatour* between Christ and us? can there be no *union* with Christ, unless we bring *faith*, and *repentance* with us? truly then we must have *Mediatours* to bring us unto Christ : but doth not the Gospel require *faith* and *repentance* in all that be in Christ? true ; but how comes a man by the *faith* and *repentance* of the Gospel? Zach. 12. 10. I will *pour* upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of *Jerusalem*, a Spirit of grace, and supplication, and they shall look on him whom they have pierced, and mourn for him, &c. This looking is *faith*, and this *mourning* is *repentance*; thus Christ seeth us before we see him, and because we are sons, God hath shed abroad the Spirit of sons into our hearts, Gal. 4. 6, 7. and hereby we come to see him, and more and more of him ; and this is the way of the Gospel of Jesus Christ : First, We have him, and him drawing us, and sitting us by his Spirit, whereby we come to see him ; and then we *mourn* over him for all the wrong we have done him ; this is that *faith* and *repentance* that flows from Christ, and then brings us unto him : if it flow not from him, but first brings us unto him, it is not the *faith* and *repentance* of Gods elect, nor that which the Gospel holds forth : First take Christ, and then you have all things in him.

Again, As nothing can first bring us unto Christ : so neither will it be able to *maintain* our communion with him : for as he is the *door* ; so he is the *Surety* of the Covenant, he is the *Publisher*, and *Confirmer*, and *Prince* of the Covenant ; and he receives and keeps

keeps all the blessings of the Covenant for us. You will say, What then would you have us to neglect repentance? and faith? no, no, brethren; but exercise your selves in all godliness, 1 Tim. 4. 7. but let it be godliness then; let it not be righteousness only, but godliness; even such as springeth from fellowship with God in Jesus Christ: but when you have done all you can, do not think that this will give you rest: be not deceived; you will not find that your souls are any thing nearer to God, when you have prayed constantly morning and evening: indeed if the Lord strengthen your faith, and give you comfort, this is effectual; but it is because you did not rest in the Letter of the duty, but you did exercise your self unto godliness in a way of faith, and by faith the walls of Jericho fall down, and the walls of Jerusalem are built up: and so make account that your godliness must be exercised to fetch all from Christ, otherwise that which you have will not uphold you; when you have done all you can, wait upon him to speak a word of comfort to you in his own way, for his own names sake: and so shall you indeed exercise the gifts of God as not abusing them, and so exercise godliness, as not to talk of it, but to practise it; and so use it as it ought to be used, as fit to be an handmaid, but not fit to be an husband: fit to be serviceable unto Christ, but not fit to jostle him out of his Kingdome,

Use 3. In the third place, this is a ground of much strength unto faith, and encouragement unto all the duties, and fruits of faith; that the Lord hath made such a Covenant as this is; an everlasting covenant, stablished upon better grounds, in the hands of a better mediator; that is, so fit to bring us unto God, and to maintain union and communion between God and



and us; to remove all offences, and quicken our spirits towards God: it is our strength to rest upon this rock of Israel; *this is indeed eternal life*, Joh. 17. 3. when we can say to *Saints*, and *Angels*, We know you not, and to our *own righteousness*, and all the *duties* of it, We know you not, in point of *mediation*: but *Jesus* we know, and his *righteousness* and *mediation* we know: as for other things, bring them in their places; but if you bring them in point of *mediation*, they will keep us from closing with Christ. Therefore such as desire to maintain and to see maintained firm and full communion with *Jesus Christ*; let the Lord *Jesus* only be their *Advocate*, and *Righteousness*, for it is he that worketh all our works for us, and in special this main work of making & maintaining peace for us: if then we rest not on what we are or do, but look unto Christ for our acceptance, and know that we are unprofitable without him; then do we not abuse our gifts, and duties, but use them as fruits of Christ's *mediation*: if we look at them as *causes* of our *mediation*, we do utterly evacuate the *mediation* of *Jesus Christ*: neither can we *continue* in that state, without the same hand of grace: for even the *Angels* in heaven (as is generally received) stand confirmed in *Jesus Christ*: if therefore they could not stand firm were it not for *Jesus Christ*, much less shall the sinful sons of men come unto union, or stand firm in communion with God by their best graces; but when you have done all, your union will be broken, if the Lord doth not both begin and perfect it to immortality. Yea, even then when you are full of all the power of the most High, and of all heavenly consolation, it is *Jesus Christ*, that maintaineth your

your *union* with himself: therefore let creatures know that they are creatures, and let them look at the *gifts* bestowed upon them, and *works* done by them, as the way, which the Lord hath given them to walk in. Say not, We have all we look for, nor think we our selves fit to be accepted of God: it is a Popish delusion; it is not all our endeavours or duties, that will *maintain* us in *communion* with God one hour to an end. Thus you see that all these things are as they are, you have done but your duty in them all, and but a piece of that neither, and you have neither *power*, nor *right*, nor *fitness* in your selves to stand in Gods sight. In the meanwhile, this is a point of much *consolation*, that the Lord had laid up the *promises* in a safer hand than our own, so as that now there is no fear of breaking between God, and *Abraham*, and his *faithful seed*, for the Lord hath promised to take us to be his people, and given *Christ* to be the *Mediatour* of the *Covenant*; then he will see this Covenant maintained, and perfected, and all the  *blessings*, *promises*, and *treasures* of it accomplished to us from day to day: do but know him, and be acquainted with him, and it will be of effectual power to root out all the diffidence that is in us; look upon *Jesus Christ*, and *wait* on him; and yet neither can we *bring* our *waiting* unto him, but it is our part to be convinced of our own *poverty*, and *insufficiency*; and then all our power, and help, and hope, is in maintaining our fellowship with *Jesus Christ*: wait upon him, that he may carry an end the whole work of a *Mediatour* for you, and that he may never leave you, till you be settled in heaven, nor then neither: for even the *Angels*

in heaven would not be steadfast, but that the Lord hath laid a sure foundation in a *middle person*, that he might ~~unite~~ *unite* God and the creatures together. There is comfort in knowing this though we have but little experience of it, because there is comfort laid up in it : therefore that we might not ravel out our time in vain, know we, that there is an *Aliquid ultra*, something further to be sought after, besides what we have found in our selves : we sometimes hear of *conditional promises*, but as the Lord Jesus is the *first* and *last* in other things, so in the *Covenant*, he is the *first* and *last condition* : he doth *first* bring us unto God, and so to the *right* of the *Covenant* ; and when we are in Christ, we cannot be active of our selves, nor keep our peace with God but through him : if you stay in any thing that you can do, you have forgotten that Christ is the *last condition* ; you have no *right* unto the *Covenant* before you *have him* ; you have no *condition* of the *new Covenant*, unless you *have him*. But when I have Christ, have I not now the *condition* in my self ? which the promise requireth ? truly you have not, for Jesus Christ is the *last condition*, as well as the *first* ; and if your *right* unto the *promise* be not maintained by him, you forfeit the promise, as soon as you lay hold of it : you must therefore look back again unto Christ, not only to give you the *right* unto the *promise*, but the *accomplishment* of it ; otherwise you may stay many a seven years, if you look for it in your own works : though thou hadst right in Christ, and fellowship with Christ, and shalt look for comfort from thine own duties, thou mayest look  
till



till thine eyes fail, and not finde it. *Christ* is the first, and the last in the Promises he gave you; the *Yea*, and he must be the *Amen*: therefore know, that in all the duties you perform, you must, as it were, be dressing a meal for *Jesus Christ*, *Luk.* 17. 7, 8, 9, 10. and be content to feed after him, and upon him, who is the beginner and maintainer of the Covenant for us; and will perfect all the powerful blessings of it, in us and for us, in his own time.

---

FINIS.

---